













# THE LITTLE ILIAD

BY

MAURICE HEWLETT

ILLUSTRATED BY

SIR PHILIP BURNE-JONES, BART.

"There were four brothers  
loved one lass"

*Coimar and Strangerd*



LONDON

WILLIAM HEINEMANN



# CONTENTS

CHAP	PAGE
I INITIATION	1
II ILLUMINATION	15
III IMPLICATION	33
IV INTENTION	46
V INVERORAN	61
VI THE STATE VISIT	76
VII SETTLING IN	88
VIII EUPHEMIA	101
IX THE BALL	109
X SEQUELÆ	120
XI THE FIRMNESS OF HECTOR	131
XII HELENA FLIES	146
XIII ASYLUM	165
XIV DAUGHTER OF THE HOUSE	174
XV INTERRUPTION	184
XVI THE SIEGE OPENS	201
XVII HECTOR IN FORCE	212

# CONTENTS

VI

---

CHAP	PAGE
XVIII BATTLE SWAYS	226
XIX AMAZEMENT OF HECTOR	245
XX PIERPOINT	254
XXI SURRENDER	267
XXII PASSION OF SIR RODERICK	276
XXIII THE END OF IT ALL	286

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

A DARK BULK LOOMED IN THE PASSAGE	<i>Frontispiece</i>
AND PRETTY SOON I HEARD THE TWO STICKS AND GUESSED AT THE DRAGGING GLIDE	<i>To face page</i> 82
WE RETIRED, FEELING WHAT WE DESERVED TO FEEL	204
OUT OF THE DARK CAME A WHITE FIGURE	220



## I INITIATION

I AM sure that such things as I have to relate in these chapters—things of which I was the concerned witness from beginning to end—could not happen in any country of Europe but my own, a country where respect for things in being is carried to the other side of idolatry, and where, at the same time, you may see men, and even communities of men, run head-long down steep places to destruction in pursuit of abstract ideas, and win in the ridiculous act the admiration and respect of those to whom the ideas themselves are shocking. A Briton, you admit, reveres established order, fears God, honours the King, loves his father and mother, &c. So he does. But say that a man knocks his head against established order—sufficiently hard, say that he perishes for atheism's sake, is exiled for his nihilism, disputes his father's will, to bankruptcy, or runs away with his neighbour's wife on altruistic grounds—that man, when he has been disposed of with savagery, may easily become



a national hero. We say that it's dogged that does it, that he is a True Blue, a hard-bitten man. If he is a poet, he becomes a classic. If he is a politician, he founds a party, and his name inflames men to dangerous cheering. To be short, we adore the thing that is, because it is, and we adore the man who tries to destroy it, not because he succeeds, but because he tries. It's all very odd.

But sentiment, which in England carries its head so high, carries also lance and shield, and presents a brave front to the wind and the ram. The harder, indeed, it blows, the more bravely picks the gentle knight. It is fair weather that brings him down. For he carries with him, too, his own bane, a little worm which gropes a way into his marrow, and inflames the optic nerve.

When Hector Malleson went out to set the world into order it was not riot or clamour that loosened his knees. On the contrary, the extreme lengths to which the romantic led him were in themselves a warrant of success. He was in fact too successful. All fell out as he could have desired. He achieved a preposterous position for himself and his mistress. He bestrode a bottomless gulf with triumphant intrepidity. The world wondered.

And then, even as we gaped, he sagged in the middle and fell in. The affair which he had begun went on of itself. It was as if the champion of Troy, instead of going out to face Achilles, had stayed at home with the toothache, and left the affair to Priam, King and Patriarch. That was what happened in this leaguer of a minor Troy, which I chronicle here. A maggot entered my poor Hector and palsied his blow. You see, I scorn concealment. I lay out my wares on the tray. I could even tell you the name of the maggot, but that you have guessed it for yourself.

I remember talking about these very things to Hector Malleson on one of our annual journeys over the Continent, of which Great Britain is so discordant a member—long before the events which I am going to write about now were in solution. We were driving up and down those huge circular sweeps of road which take you in time, though you don't at the time believe it, over the Jura; and were talking, to be exact, about the power of love to "make or mar the foolish fates." Hector, dear, absurd fellow, was one of those men who when they are in love cannot conceive that they ever were or ever will be out of it.

again, and when they are not (which happens quite as often) do not believe that they ever were. At the moment he was not in love, he had, in fact, just escaped a rather bad attack in London with a young and very pretty widow, a black-haired woman with a magnolia-skin and the appurtenances thereof. She sailed, rather suddenly, to Buenos Ayres, and left him like Ariadne in Naxos. It was tonic. He shook himself, shuddered, and foreswore love.

Now, in the Julia, he was telling me with all seriousness that no great man, "no man born to great destinies," as he put it, had ever risked his greatness for a woman. Not being concerned to affirm or deny, I didn't go far afield for my example, but mentioned Paris, the "woman-haunting cheat," who is surely the type. Paris, of course, will only support a very light-hearted argument, but he took him on for more than he was worth, being Hector Malleson, he took him historically, and disposed of him thus. "Paris," he said, "is obviously your man"—as if I wanted a man!—"but he won't help you. Paris, to begin with, was not Priam's heir. Hector was the heir. I think that is obvious in the name given to his son by the people—

Astyanax, they called him King of the city.  
That was proleptic That is allowed in  
poetry "

I said that he ought to know—for he was  
by way of being a poet himself. That also  
he took gravely, and I remember how he sat,  
with an outline something between an inter-  
rogation and an exclamation-mark, drawn up  
stiffly to his slim height, with his hands pointed  
between his knees

"Paris has been misunderstood," he said.  
"He has been taken for a sensualist, but  
wrongly. He was a great idealist. He risked  
his father's kingdom and dared ten years of  
war for the sake of an idea Now that's a  
very different sort of thing Many a man  
has been eaten by worms for that—but not  
for love " I felt rather than heard the tremor  
in his voice.

"And what was Paris's idea, according to  
you ? " I asked him

He replied immediately. "The profanation  
of Beauty. He risked everything to prevent  
that And he was right. If he had been  
Crown Prince of Troy he could have done  
no less "

Now Hector was a Crown Prince in his way.  
He was the eldest son and heir of Sir Roderick

Malleson, Bart, of Singleton and Inveroran, in the Western Highlands—to the permanent bewilderment, let me add, of that royal-eyed old Berseik himself. So you may say that he measured his words. But he always did that. He was the most serious young man in the world, and one of the most ridiculous. Men of extreme positions—and he was one of them, for ever at the end of the bough or the top of the pole—must always appear that to us who are snugly by the hearth. It is gallantry that carries them there, and only human nature that makes them see-saw for a balance. But the effort is ungraceful, and we smile.

I was awfully fond of Hector. He was as good as gold, as the saying is. But he was the cause of infinite chucklement to me, and sometimes he brought me tears—or something very much like tears. Himself, he never laughed.

I remember that conversation perfectly, and can see him with his thin olive face and heavy eyes, his slim gallantry and air of a lost cause—only too well. But it took place many years before we met the von Broderodes. Many things happened to Hector Malleson in the interval; many a touch-and-go affair was

hit upon and just missed ; many a stormy interview with Sir Roderick flashed and volleyed through Inveroran, and died away in mutterings among the hills up there. They made a great rumpus at the time, and had Hector at the edge of the world contemplating infinity with tragic eyes as often as you please ; they divided the great patriarchal house into hostile camps, so that sometimes you had Hector and half of his brothers breakfasting and dining in the East Wing, while his father and a remnant held the hall, like a citadel, and commanded the supplies. There was one occasion—I mean when Mrs. Gellaghtly, a sprightly American, was there. She lifted her fair foot once and struck a match on the sole of her shoe. One saw—well, one had to look out of the window. And then she got lost in the forest with Pierpoint and came back to breakfast as if nothing had happened—as perhaps it did not. There was that one occasion, I say, when I really thought the House of Inveroran was rocked to the foundations. Hector, who had brought the lady upon us, had gone bail for her, you may say, and even at this eleventh hour was her champion, shook the dust off his brogues and vanished ; two of his brothers went with

him The situation was saved by Mrs. Gellaghtly herself, who did *not* vanish—and by Mr Gellaghtly, an elderly, very thin person in a frock-coat and white tie, who came and lived unmoved through an electric twenty-four hours She called him “hub” and perched upon his narrow knees She was like—or looked like—a speckled hen sitting on a fence, it was daring, and entirely successful Sir Roderick simmered down, Hector wrote a long letter on foreign notepaper from Madeira or somewhere of the sort, and all was peace again He came up to Inveroran for Christmas. That was the last of his eruptions for at least a year and a half Indeed, affairs had gone with perilous smoothness up to the spring when we were abroad together, and met the von Broderodes. Then, indeed, the casting of threads began which were to involve us all in a pretty plexus To that I must now address myself

The thing began in a watering-place, to call it so, in the South of Central Europe, in a place which I need not particularize further than by saying that on the edge of a beautiful lake, under the guard of solemn and slumberous mountains, the greed of man to secure the

shillings of his stupid fellows has done his worst to soil the one and flout the other. The description, I confess, is general, but I don't care to go any closer to it for obvious reasons.

The thing began, as such things, in my belief, always do begin, in a flash. A blink of the eyes and there is nothing, a blink of the eyes and there is this life and the next, the hope of heaven and the yawn of hell. How is it that at one minute you are looking at familiar things—ducks in a pond, a man and woman talking, a boy in a bath-chair and a girl walking beside it—and at another you see upon them the light that never was? What has happened that the heart is touched, trembles to tears? The thing is done, all your life-scheme is changed. What sudden glory floods your day with the implication of God? What stab of the heart brings it about that you are not the man, nor she the woman, you were a moment ago? Whence comes a glory upon her, a sanctity? The particles, the flesh and bone, the hair and skin have been rearranged, transfigured. You yourself now thrill like an Æolian harp, and as for her, she is garmented with light. There's no explaining a thing of the sort. It is not—and then it is. It has never been so yet to



me My time's to come. But it happened to Hector about once a year. He was a great hand at miracles.

I had been at this place—let us call it Gironeggio at once and have done with it—with Hector Malleson for a week or so of fine April weather misty mornings clearing to burning noons, weather of magnolias in a riot of bloom, of corn already knee-high, of blue fields of flax, of roses dusty with the foul traffic of man in his roads. There was nothing to do but be glad of it all, take it all in through the pores. One felt, after a London February and March, as if one had earned it. I think we intended to have another ten days there at least before we addressed ourselves to the small cities of Lombardy, where I intended to archæologize and Malleson to read history. If only he had read history instead of made it! But you never know your luck. There were Modena and Parma and Cremona gaping for him—and he must choose the primrose path!

However, Gironeggio was very pleasant, and the particular Majestic Palace where we were lodged was better than most, being, in fact, less majestic. But it was full. The English

were, as usual, mostly of two professions. Every one of them seemed to be either barrister or schoolmaster, all of them were engaged in climbing the mountain or collecting, with avid haste, plants which they could slay at their leisure in Thames-valley or Kent-coast rockeries. They were a brisk and wholesome company, but not illuminating, unless you like your light very dry. Their wives, short-skirted and clump-soled, flat of figure and tanned of face, accompanied them, severe and uncompromising matrons with views as decided as their petticoats. I liked their daughters best, who looked like boys all day, and dressed for dinner as if they were going to a children's party afterwards. Malleson got on well with them, because he was perfectly serious and had no self-consciousness. They, having enough for six, found him easy. The rest of our company were Germans; but of them, so delightful at home, so devastating abroad, with their exaggerated politeness and latent brutality, I must speak with reserve—because we became involved with Germans. We found out for how little race counts when the particles have been rearranged by the Lady Fates—and also for how much.

But people fall easily into types; and for

a week neither Malleson nor I took the trouble to get them into narrower categories. Every fat man with a rolled neck who made jokes and punctuated them with bowing salutations from the hips seemed to be German, every dark man with large ears and handsome and bulky ladies attached to his person we took for a Jew, every man with a ragged beard and mild eyes was a Russian . . . and so forth. When you came to know these people well enough to take liberties with their faces, you could sort them out. By a process of weeding you discarded the uninteresting or the obvious. And just as, by gazing steadily into the dusk, things emerge which you did not remark at first encounter, so it is with a crowd of people—a face suddenly looms and seems to cry to you. And then, in a minute, you are hard up against a mystery or a romance.

Now all this preamble is to explain how it is that a couple of people in that hotel had been in front of us for a week of days before we considered them, or so much as knew they were there. When I did become conscious of them I judged that they had been there some time. They had the air of habitués. They seemed to have cushioned out for themselves

corners in the rigid discomfort of our majestic palace. They always occupied the same places, at the same hours. The waiters brought them, without orders, the same things at the same moments every day. Her egg-and-milk at ten-thirty she took it in the garden. At eleven she gave *him* her aim and took him off to walk. She had tea and lemon at four, he had absinthe. After dinner, at a fixed moment, came his coffee and cognac, then his tumbler of strong waters. It was all so regular, and so dull, that you had, when once you had remarked upon it, to go on watching it. It became a fascination. You began to understand that they lived by clockwork. hour to hour was struck by something to be done, eaten or prepared for eating, slept upon, walked in, taken off a peg, or hung up on one. The regularity of it absorbed you. You used, as a working hypothesis, the belief that these were not real people, but automata, and when you had to discard that by some unexpected flash or flicker you wondered how they could go on doing it and not go mad. And finally you judged that severe routine may as easily keep you from going mad as send you so.

I don't pretend to say—I never asked him—

whether observation on Hector's part preceded discovery; whether, that is, facts of these people's daily life slowly accumulated like a pile of kindling, and then, perhaps, broke into fire by their own pressure and mass; or whether he himself brought the burning glass and by the light of that revealed and fired the dreadful dry heap. I really don't know exactly how it was that the underlying, the secluded heart of the thing stood nakedly before his ingenuous, but quite candid, gaze. My own observation of the pair followed on his concernment with them. All I need say now is that on the evening arranged by the Fates I came down dressed for dinner and found him concerned—up to the neck.

## II ILLUMINATION

HECTOR was dressed before I was half-way through my bath I know that because I heard him throw his boots down and then bang his door On my way downstairs to the hall where we used to assemble I saw him leaning against a pillar He was scowling; but he couldn't help that—that was facial otherwise he might have been saying his prayers or (which is the same thing with his sort) looking at a woman. His eyes were grey, and looked black at night People—even women—thought him a black-eyed man. He was thin, sallow, elegant, and had jet-black hair. Not so good-looking as all that came to, he had a trustworthy face because it was essentially a simple one. You knew where you were with a face like that, you knew that it disguised nothing, you felt that there was nothing to disguise. Again, he had a caressing manner. I found him soothing—I knew a great many others did. Then he had good teeth, and a singularly sweet smile.

It was that in particular which saved him from the acute crisis frequently brought on him by his want of tact. For tactlessness he was without a peer. You would have thought men and women centipedes from the havoc Hector did among their toes. As for his own treadings, he would have made a *faux pas* on the Last Day. But his smile saved him—that never failed. And he was a lovable creature. If he made more enemies than were good for any man, he turned them all into friends—which was perhaps worse. Bless him, anyhow, for a donkey, the most sincere, irresistible, serious-minded, enthusiastic, impracticable donkey that ever brought a stick about his ears.

But all this is a digression. He tempts me to parentheses, but it is the fact that he was looking at a woman. He and she were conspicuous in a hall which even then was three parts full of diners, moving about, hailing each other, recounting the prowesses of the day or the schemes for to-morrow. Certainly I had not seen her before or I think I must have remarked her. A tallish woman, she was; pale, with a face like a star. That is poetry perhaps—it is, to be just to him, Hector's poetry—but like all poetry it is

true. She had a starry face, a kind of divine, remote limpidity, as if she smiled in her own atmosphere, apart from the dust and heat of ours. She carried herself rarely, and though she was plainly dressed she had the air of jewels about her—especially in her hair. I mean that her head seemed to be lifting a coronet. Her hair was dark, lustrous and abundant, smooth over her brows, heavily looped and bunched behind. It was like a hood to her, thrown back to rest upon the nape and shoulders. I suppose that she really was tall, but being modestly formed she did not look her height. Her matronly air was seated in her eyes and lips. It was impossible to suppose her unmarried. You couldn't have thought that for a moment. She had no lines on her face, but I put her down for thirty-five. Malleson in his ardour said thirty, and turned out to be right. She was dressed that evening in black—black silk and lace—without any ornaments but a few rings. I noticed afterwards that she always dressed in black or white—so long, that is, as she remained at Gironeggio.

I had come down from my part of the house by the lift, which brought me out behind Malleson. The lady stood at the foot of the



stairs at the other end of the hall. She was alone, but evidently waiting for a companion.

"Austrian." I said over Malleson's shoulder, and made him jump.

He shook me off in momentary irritation. "You would label the Venus of Milo," he said, and I replied that the Louvre had saved me the trouble, but that I would certainly have done it if necessary.

"Such women have no country," Hector said, as if to himself. I suggested the Pays du Tendre, but I don't think he heard me.

There were a great many people about, and she was not, I hope, aware of our unaffected interest in her. I trusted then, I am quite sure now, that we were not so conspicuous to her as she was to us. She had, anyhow, that peculiar possession of the well-bred, that power of ignoring what is disagreeable or uncomfortable—of ignoring it out of existence, you may say. She remained where she was, with one hand upon the banister-rail, not so much indifferent to the assemblage about her as independent of it. I don't think she knew that we were there—any of us. Her simplicity was upon her like a panoply, so much so that one was almost provoked by it, conscious of a desire to try it, to find out whether it was

as shock-proof as it seemed. But after a while it reacted upon me, and I felt that we couldn't stop there for ever

"Come," I said. "We can't spy upon her "

Hector murmured some inaudible thing. By this time the diners had begun to flock into the *salle à manger*, and I saw our common friend Chevenix already at our table.

"Come along," I repeated. "Chevenix is arranging his table-napkin. I see him at it."

"Wait," said Mallcon. "Wait. Or go if you like. I stay here. I can't come yet."

At that minute—the hall being nearly emptied of its folk—a dark bulk loomed in the passage beside the stairs which leads from the ground-floor rooms; and then I heard a peculiar sliding noise, as if one was dragging a weight over the floor. The lady looked quickly round, left her anchorage and stood facing the dining-room doors. This then was her companion—a darkly flushed, bearded man, square-shouldered, round-headed, dragging a foot, and moving out of the dark, as it seemed by main force. A wounded monster—a maimed Titan, halng himself along.

He had a stick in each clenched hand, and

got along rather than walked. It must have been enormous labour—you could see the muscles grappling with the problem—you could see that each step, indeed, was a new problem, and yet his eyes were twinkling; he smiled into the lady's face. he, too, had patience, to cope with hers. I saw the meeting of eyes: his laughing to ask, hers not giving, but rather accepting. As he drew level with her she turned, and accommodating her pace to his, together they went into the dining-room. She was built for swiftness, but she curbed herself. I saw his square shoulders doggedly conquering the inches to the table, doggedly dragging that dead weight.

What more Malleson saw, or what he had seen, I can't tell you. He turned upon me a tragic look.

"Doom," he said. "A human sacrifice—appointed to live, not to die. I feel sick at the heart."

He looked as if he was charged with heavy fate—as if all the burden of two unhappy creatures whom he had never seen before in his life had been piled on to his pair of slim shoulders. but I knew him well. I made the best of it, for his sake.

"It's bad," I admitted. "It's bad, but

it might be worse. Did you see her come into the hall ? ”

He looked at me for a few seconds without speaking. Then he nodded his head and looked away. I waited. Presently he said—it was as if I had compelled him—“She came downstairs ” It is true, I had intended him to tell me that, as I say, for his own sake.

“Come,” I said ; “we’ll go and dine.” But he shook me off.

“Dine as you will I can’t. I shall go out and walk about. I’ll get something to eat when I want it. I can’t go in there. I don’t want to see them again just yet. I tell you I can’t afford it ”

I didn’t reason with him—why should I ? It would have been foolishness. So I left him and joined the exasperated Chevenix, a copper-headed, red-faced, very complacent friend, who was said to be easily the best-dressed man in Gironeggio

I saw him with extended hand and fire in his blue eyes threatening the waiter He had no fulmination to spare for me—at least, I think not.

“What the devil . . .” he was saying, but at the same moment his soup came to him,

and did more than any excuses from me. He addressed himself to that. "It might be hotter," he said, "but it seems nourishing. Where's Malleson?"

I explained that Malleson wasn't dining. Chevenix looked momentarily concerned

"What's up?" he asked. "Toothache? Telegrams? Can I do anything?"

"Nothing, Chevenix," I assured him, and looked about for the real cause of trouble.

They had a side-table and a diligent attendance. I guessed them immediately for persons of consequence, because the head-waiter had such a careful eye for them. Apart from that, they looked it. The man, with his square bulk and hardy eyes, had the assured air of the comfortably cushioned in this world, that air of a corner-seat which the great, especially the foreign great, are seldom without. An English peer is very often apologetic. He seems to say, "Excuse my greatness. I was born to it—it's a thing that can't be helped." The French aristocrat, on the other hand, is frank about it. "I am somebody, and you are *canaille*. True. But all that apart, how can I serve you?" And as for the German—it is like the rest of his system. It is the act of God.

I put these people down as Austrians, and Chevenix, when I called his attention to them, agreed.

"Austrian, right," he said. "You can always tell. If ever you see Germans who seem sorry about it, and anxious to be something else, they are Austrians. Very nice people—except to each other. There, I happen to know, they are the deuce. I knew a couple once—" But at that moment he stopped. He stared—he grew red—he looked the other way.

"Sorry," he said, then to me in a tragic whisper, "Bad case."

I had seen what he had seen. The man by sheer muscular force had managed to drink out of a wine-glass. He had collected, concentrated, his will-power upon it, grappled with it, rocked it to and fro in mighty conflict, drained it, and set it down. It gave you much the same effect as you would get at a circus from an elephant lighting a cigar—that of enormous concentration, of incredible difficulties overcome by strength. It was a question of a few seconds only; yet I had seen the gathering of the forces for attack, the clutching hand, the putting forth of all his strength—and the futility of effort. It

affected me very much. I felt it tragic and horrible at once

It set Chevenix moralizing at random. "That's bad, you know, when you get it like that. Uses up your reserves, what? And all for a drink! All for love and the world well lost, eh? Oh, quite so, quite so! But for a glass of claret!" He mused, and I had lost the thread of his discourse when he broke out again, "I knew a man—married to a jolly pretty woman, too—who had no feet at all. Accident, you know. Volcano or something Found himself in lava—that sort of thing Pegs he had—two pegs. No feet He used to go dotting about with two sticks You might have been following your own dressing-table, I assure you. . . . A pretty woman, too. Yet he seemed to give satisfaction. She never looked at anybody else—so far as *I* know."

"You mean that she didn't look at you, I suppose?" I ventured

"Right," said Chevenix "That's just what I do mean."

"Now, with our friend over there," he continued, when he had helped himself to ice-pudding, "I should say that *she* was considerably bored. Shouldn't you? She's

your still-water sort—*that* you can see. *She* never told her love. Not she Sooner die. Bless you, I know that kind. Damask check, what? I suppose, you know, that it took her unawares. And him, too. A thief in the night. Oh, it's pretty thick, a thing of that sort. And—I say! ” He suddenly fixed me with a very open and alert pair of eyes. “I say, what's the matter with Malleson, anyhow? ”

I must say that Bill Chevenix, with the manners of a first-class ass, has a far-reaching intelligence. Here, however, he rather divined than inferred.

I said, “Malleson has seen them ”

“And it has knocked him out? Well, he's a sensitive plant. But Broderode's all right ”

I jumped “What! ” I said. “You know them, then? ”

He grew explanatory “My dear man, I know their names—that's as far as I am prepared to go at present. He is a Baron Eugene von Broderode—and she is his Baroness ”

“Then you've seen them before? ”

Chevenix tossed his head. “Seen them before? I should hope so. When did you ever know me *not* see a pretty woman before? You imagine a vain thing.”



I said that she was more than a pretty woman, and he allowed it. I said that she was a beautiful woman, by which I largely mean a woman made beautiful by a beautiful nature. A kind of lamp, illuminated from within. I judged that she was not a happy woman and didn't see how she could expect to be; but I allowed a great deal for use-and-wont, and wasn't prepared to be as shocked as the too susceptible Hector had been. I considered that she was chiefly bored, but I admit that I had not gone deeply into her case. Perhaps you need imagination to do that. I don't think I have much of it. I did notice, however, that they were a silent couple, speaking only upon commonplaces; I noticed also that such talk as there was came from him. She answered, but carelessly, as if such prattle was not worth notice. Then again there was this. He sought her attention and occasionally compelled it. She looked at him when she had to, but not unless he made her. Letters and a newspaper or two were brought to them by the ever-watchful head-waiter. She opened his for him, as the poor fellow was making a dreadful mess of it. Her own occupied her for the rest of the meal. She ate hardly anything; but he, on

the contrary, did himself extremely well, and wrestled for his wine with a zeal worthy of a better cause. To see him at that was to witness an enthralling spectacle. A battle on a large scale—masses engaged—no quarter—and all for a glass of claret !

After dinner we took our coffee in the Lounge with a cosmopolitan Dutchman from The Hague, who knew everybody. Eugene von Broderode was our man's name, he agreed. *She* was a Pole, he believed. His family, of course, was from the Low Countries, he bore an historical name, but he was of a younger branch of it long settled in Galicia. A very accomplished man, great traveller, spoke English as well as we did ; had been in diplomacy, and was so when our friend saw most of him—in Rome that had been, in '86-'88. We saw how it was with him ? Here Chevenix nodded sagely and looked concerned. Never be surprised at such things, said our friend. His manner of life had been—here he shrugged up into the air—absurd—up to the hilt. He went into life, as you can find it when you want it, with the zest of a young giant. It had been one long series of pursuits. And in at the death every time.

He shrugged his chorus to the strokes of Doom. "He got out by marriage—as you see. Just in time, as it seemed. She was a girl of eighteen—out of a convent school It was twelve or more years ago. Nearer fourteen, I should say. She didn't make a fuss—either from pure ignorance or because they never do. For they don't, you know. If once they began that, God knows where they would end—" There he paused and stroked the ash off his cigar against the match-box. He rolled the glowing stump about in his fingers; and then said slowly and with great distinctness, "And I think he would be a bad friend to a woman who taught her that her lot might be very much better than it is—in every case."

We had no commentary to offer upon this dictum; but I thought of my grave-eyed friend pacing the shores of the lake.

Meantime I had been observing the pair upon whose nature and lot Van Ruver had been moralizing. They sat apart in a recess by the staircase, she with her needles and silk, he with his cigar. I admired the play of her beautiful hands, but still more her extraordinary patience. At the allotted moment came the coffee equipage and the old brandy.

She busied herself with that, serving him but not herself, and then resumed her netting. He, apparently at ease, literally drank at his cigar, and inhaled the last pint of joy from it. Yet you could see that he kept a watchful eye for his grim, unsleeping enemy, and gave not one inch of ground. If his paper slipped from his knee he called up his forces to recover it. It came up fluttering like a rag in a gale—but it came. She did not help him—one saw that he would not allow that. By incredible efforts he accomplished what was needful with the appearance of ease. I warmed to him for his courage and audacity; and when he began to play patience, and at every shift of a card had to risk battle and rout—and nearly always triumphed—horrible as the flickering business was to watch, I felt that I could have been proud either of his friendship or his enmity. He was no slurker. He faced the foe. There was no faltering. The foe would pin him at last; but he would go to his death with the flag flying.

He was a strong man armed, with his handsome, galliard, shining face. He had kind, blue, humorous eyes, eyes which were kind even in the trap's teeth, and did not cease their laughing scrutiny. You couldn't

catch him out anywhere. He was ready for you at all points. He seemed to me abundantly clever and capable, so thoroughly awake as he was to a delicate situation. Occasionally, I went so far as to judge, he was foolhardy in his gallantry; he took risks which were heavy. But I thought I could hear his apology. "See," he might well be saying, "see how it is that, with this ghastly shackling upon me, I still hold this lovely creature at a nod. There's no chain; there's nothing but a confident look." That was true; there was no appeal. "I put it to you. You took me, here I am as you see me. Well, what are we to make of it, you and I?" I am not saying that there is no other side to this brave shield of his. I am saying that this was gallantry.

Chevenix, rendered grave by Van Ruyver's reminiscences, had been blinking his light eyelashes over them. Then he said that he remembered a murder case where the defence was something like this. The accused said that he had sat opposite the murdered woman for something like twenty years without speaking. It had become a habit. They had not quarrelled, but they had nothing to say; so they didn't speak. Then, one evening, it

struck him like a fire-ball from heaven, "Lord of Life and Death, I shall have to sit opposite this woman for twenty years more perhaps—and neither of us have a word to say. It is not to be borne " He yielded to the impulse—and he killed her.

Van Ruver chuckled. "Did they allow the plea ? "

"They did not," said Chevenix.

"They hanged him ? "

"They did "

Van Ruver said, "Perhaps it was well. And yet it's as likely a form of madness as any other that leads to sudden violence."

"Mind you," said Chevenix, "the thought might drive anybody mad. What ! All silent and all damned ! "

"Yes," said Van Ruver, getting up. "But no woman would have had the thought for a moment It would have seemed quite in the order of things "

Thereupon he left us and crossed the room to greet our pair Baron von Broderode gaily held out his left hand. The Baroness smiled up at him from her work, but offered no more formal greeting. Van Ruver bowed deeply to her, and began to talk. The Baron laughed and joked, but never ceased for one

moment his running battle. Every card that he moved flickered terribly in his hand.

We watched them for a while. Then Chevenix said, "Good old Hector He should have been here He'd have been interested. Come and play French pills I'll take you on "

### III IMPLICATION

WE saw nothing of Hector that night, but before it was ended our Dutch acquaintance had presented Chevenix and me formally to the Baron and his fair wife. That was exciting, as actual contact must always be, where the person touched has been the object of more or less intense speculation. He bustles at every point with the darts of your surmises. I found him, as I had expected, most affable; he spoke fluent, idiomatic English—occasionally at fault. He rose to greet us—I saw his brow break into beads of sweat as he did it. but do it he would and did. He said that he was delighted to see us, and I really thought that he was. She contented herself with bending her beautiful head—an act like that of a princess bowing from a carriage—but by and by she slid into the conversation, and towards the end she could laugh and be at ease with my engaging, red-headed friend, who, with a casual manner, always succeeded in getting interest, because he always gave it.



I forget what we all talked about—anything or nothing, as people do in hotels; but I do remember that Chevenix brought in the absent Hector. “A very serious young man,” he told the Baroness. “Malleeson,” he said, “is a man who thinks that he was born to put the world to rights. O cursèd spite? I beg your pardon—not at all. He doesn’t mind doing it in the least; but it weighs upon him all the same. He feels the responsibility. The time is slipping by, you see. He thinks us all very frivolous.” She was prepared for his examples, she could see that he was seething with anecdote—but it was her husband who spoke. I didn’t think he had been listening.

“How is he getting on—your friend?” he asked, deeply appreciative of the nature of the man thus lightly etched in.

Chevenix tossed his head. “He wrestles with it, sir. He’s out and about now, seeing that the lake does its duty. ‘Roll on, thou deep and dark blue ocean, roll’—which it does not fail to do, with Malleeson’s encouragement. Do you read Byron?” With that he turned to the lady. She confessed to having read the poet—when she was a girl.

“There’s nothing Byronic about Hector,” Chevenix told her, “except his pre-occupation

with eternity. Hector's a very religious man. He'll end up a Catholic, I don't doubt—and then he'll be all right. The Church, you see, will take his responsibilities from him. Byron would have done the same, if he'd had time "

The Baron agreed. "You are right, Mr. Chevenix," he said. "Voltaire was a pose with Byron. He wore him like plate armour. He scorned himself, that young man, and took pains to be scornful of the world in order to let himself down, as you say. There never was any man of his ability and force who got less out of this world than your Lord Byron " Here he drank prodigiously of his cigar.

"There," said Chevenix to me as we watched him heave out of sight, trailing his feet into the dusk of the passage, "there goes a man who will squeeze the last drops out of life " The implication of this heedless remark struck me all of a heap, as the companion of the ruthless Titan turned her head, and showed us her tragic profile. From what lives was he not squeezing the last drops? I was able to appreciate Hector's concern, though, unlike Hector, I did not propose to take any steps!

Van RIVER chuckled grimly. "Oh, he will squeeze life with anybody. He has always done that."

"Did you notice," Chevenix said, after a moment of amused reflection, "how he drank his cigar?"

"That was how he drank—everything," Van Ruver said. "He went over them like a hot wind."

"Them?" said Chevenix, with a lift of the eyebrow. Van Ruver nodded.

"Them," he said. "And now he's footing the bill."

I said that he did it like a man. Van Ruver shrugged.

"He gets a lot of help, you know," he said.

I thought of that pale and tragic profile, turned sideways as if looking for help. I was glad that Hector had not been there—for what can you do?

In the morning Chevenix went his ways, entrenched in portmanteaux and kit-bags. I saw him to the station on his way to Rome. "Look after Hector," were his parting words. "He'll want it. There's divine simplicity pealing in that lady's eyes. He'll hear it as you and I hear the dinner-gong."

"I know he's very susceptible," I said. "Put it down to youth. And women are made to be fallen in love with."

"Right," said Chevenix "The Catholics knew what they were about "

"I'm sure of it," said I "Bless you, she's older than Hector "

"She's a dangerous age I'll tell you a good thing I read somewhere I don't know who said it, but I daresay you do 'After forty a woman gets bored with virtue and a man with honesty ' "

"Sydney Smith said that," I told him "But be just to our friends Neither of them is forty yet."

"She's words to that effect," said Chevenix, "and as for him, the devil of it is that he'll never get tired of honesty If he did he'd be harmless I knew a man once—We're off. I leave it at that. So long " He waved his hand, and went out, veiled in anecdote to the last.

I found Hector at his coffee in the sun He looked sedate, pre-occupied, and saluted me remotely He did not seem inclined to discuss his agitation of overnight, and it wasn't for me to begin upon it. I asked him if he had any plans for the day he said, none I asked him had he thought of our movements? He said he had not I was by this time somewhat

ruffled and inclined to damn his eyes at a venture.

I said, "We should have been glad of your company last night, and I think that you would have been glad of ours. Van Ruyver was very interesting."

"He can be, I know," Hector said. "He's a wicked old sinner, but all the better company for that."

"Yes," I said, "and he knows every one. That's useful sometimes."

I think he began to have an inkling. He shot me a moment's glance, then deliberately drank before he answered.

"Very useful. Did he find some acquaintance last night?"

"He did," I said, "and we made some."

Hector's sallow skin burned—a sort of brick-red suffused him.

"The von Broderodes are friends of his. We were presented, Chevenix and I."

Hector's hand shook as he filled a pipe. He was very agitated.

"My dear chap—" he began, then he started and stopped.

"Look here, Hector," I said, "we'll get out of this place as soon as you please—" He began to fume.

"You may do as you like I have no power to stop you. I had better tell you at once that I have no intention of going, and that I don't recognize any right in the world—"

I laughed at him; a stupid thing to do. "You wouldn't recognize it if you saw it hard upon your nose," I said. "And there is no right in the matter, if you come to that. But I have rights of my own all the same, just as you may have, and if you believe it your right to languish over a married woman I am sure it is mine to avoid the spectacle. I shall go to Milan and make preparations. You'll pick me up when you want me."

"My dear fellow," said Hector quietly and with immense gravity, "I never wanted you more than I do now. You are the best friend I have in the world—and God knows I want a friend."

He touched me. I felt sorry for him. He was an ass, but he was such a generous ass. Besides that, I couldn't resist him. I ought to have known better, and I did, but he had me on my weak side. So instead of scoffing at him as I should have done, I took him for a walk and had it out of him.

He had fallen in love with this lady, instantly and plumply in love—but in the modest,

reverential way which becomes a young man of his sort. After all, young men are at their best when they are in love, and before there is any question of the hunter's instinct being aroused. He talked about her as he might have talked about his mother, if he had had one alive, half mother, half goddess, he made her out. He had spent the night on the mountain side, he told me, and had hardly known it was night before the dawn came. "I felt," he said, "that the moment of a lifetime was come upon me. I felt the call—for I must tell you what I suppose you haven't known, that our eyes met there in the hall across all those babbling idiots. They did, you know. Whatever may come of it—and God knows what that may be—we are not the same people. You can't explain these things, you can't account for them. It's as if we had invisible tentacles streaming out of us, waving, spearing into the air. These never touch but what is sympathetic—they curl and writhe and avoid all else. But by the thrill that ran all through me, and by the divine illumination of her face at that moment, I swear to you that she and I touched each other. The thing's done and can't be undone."

I took it lightly, though with heavy fore-

boding "All right," I said, "it's done then. But this is a cut-and-dried world, after all, and there's a Baron of experience in the way No tentacles streaming out of Baron Eugene"

"Is his name Eugene?" Hector asked me with great interest

"So Van Ruver tells me," I answered "Why not?"

"Oh, no reason whatever Only it's odd, because I believe that her name is Eugenia"

"But it isn't," I said "I happened to see her name on an envelope. It is Helena I hope yours isn't going to be Paris"

He was muttering to himself. "I thought it was Eugenia It *is* Eugenia as far as I am concerned"

I said rather brutally, "She must be thirty at least She's been married twelve years, and Van Ruver says that she was a girl when he married her"

He wasn't listening to me I heard him say "Eugenia" once or twice softly to himself He was very far gone

I offered to introduce him, but he said that wasn't necessary. I told him that she wouldn't drop her handkerchief for him, not being that kind He said that I didn't understand these things. When I offered to retail him some



more of the Dutchman's gossip, he cut me off short. "I'm sure you mean well, you are the best friend I have. But, you see, you and I are at cross-purposes over this. You think that I am going to make love to her, and very reasonably want to head me off. Well, I am not. You don't make what already exists. I have made all the love I intend to make her. The thing is done."

"Well, what do you intend to do next?" I asked him.

He said he didn't know. He should see her every day. That was all he could be sure of at present. I left it at that.

As it fell out, Van Ruver caught us that afternoon as we returned from a long walk, and before he knew where he was Hector was presented to his Eugenia. He was handsomely confused, she serenely unconscious of waving tentacles, to all appearance. The Baron was cordial and rose up on his two sticks like the unwearied Titan he was. First he lifted his hat with a flourish which must have cost him something; then he held out his hand. "I am very glad to meet Mr. Malleeson. The more so because I have his name by heart. It must have been a relation of yours who was a friend of

mine long ago. He was in diplomacy, and so also I. First in Madrid—that was in '90 ; and then in Petersburg. But he is dead—and I am sorry ”

That was what he said, with great ease and friendly interest. Hector heard him in a stare which showed me that he himself was not at all interested. He recovered himself just in time to avoid an awkwardness.

“ Ah, yes,” he said, “ you mean my uncle Bellasys. Yes, he is dead. He went to Teheran on a mission, and died out there.”

“ He was a good fellow,” said the Baron, warming to his reminiscences—“ a good fellow. What you call a cool cucumber I will tell you a tale of your Uncle Bellasys. It was at Nice, in the earthquake. He was shaving at his window, when, all in a moment, he sees a factory chimney down in the town break off short like a carrot and fall. At the same moment all the walls of the room begin to sway about like seaweed in the tide. The people all run out into the garden in their nightgowns—the trees begin to crack and the chimneys to tumble. But your Uncle Bellasys—he goes on shaving.” Hector taking it modestly—as anyone would take praises of his uncle—the Baron turned glowing to Van Ruyver. “ Hey,

Van Ruver, what do you say ? You knew Bellasys Malleson—hey ? He was a cool cucumber ”

I enjoyed the cool cucumber, Van Ruver applauded the uncle, and we all became very friendly. Hector sat by his Eugenia—I mean, of course, the Baroness Helena—and received tea from her. I didn't observe much intercourse between them, though no doubt the tentacles were at work. The Baron, who was in great form, never left them alone for long together ; but I was interested to observe that he rarely addressed his wife. It was Hector whom he called in to the general conversation.

I had a few words with her, and judged that she was of a cold temperament. If she had ever suffered, that was all over. She had been broken in, had found her line of least resistance and, like a wise woman, stuck to it. All this comforted me. I doubted whether Hector would get her off the track, or be tempted off it himself. There were possibilities—there always are possibilities where a man is in earnest and a woman bored. But I judged by her eyes, which were direct, grey, and very cool. You could see the thought concentrating in them before she spoke. The pupils palpitated, enlarged and contracted like sea-anemones

Finally she volunteered a fact which in my opinion settled it. She had a child—in Vienna—a girl. I was interested, and allowed myself to appear so.

“You should have brought her to Gironneggio,” I said. “How she would have liked these mountains.”

“Yes, but it was not possible,” she answered. “She has her tutors and governesses. She is very ambitious. And she knows the mountains very well. Every year she is in the Tyrol.”

“She is ambitious! It is early days to encourage ambition,” I suggested.

“She is ten,” said the Baroness with a steady look.

And so on, and so on! I don’t think that she was interested in me, and don’t wonder either. She was a lovely woman, but not my kind. I don’t like cold women, and have no use whatever for women who don’t like me. A few more general remarks found me at the end of my tether. I excused myself in the usual manner—letters to write—and went off for a bath, leaving Malleson with his lady.

After dinner he was with them again.

## IV : INTENTION

I SHALL summarize rapidly a week's work, and come to a curious episode which marks a definite stage in my history. It was a week in which I had to see my ingenuous friend get enmeshed in what he was pleased to call the Baroness's tentacles, though, to do the fair lady justice, she made no visible exertions towards it. Indeed, if tentacles there were, they were Baron Eugene's, which could not have enough of poor Hector's. He seemed to have no objections at all to his wife obtaining a *cavalhere-servente*. The marvel was that she hadn't half a dozen to do the cushion-carrying, chair-moving, bell-ringing which he himself, poor chap, was prevented from doing. Malleson was absorbed in the tender business, and had plenty of urbanity to spare for the Baron. So they made a pleasant little party of three.

He got very little out of it but the consciousness of devoted attentions. He was hardly ever alone with her, hardly ever ex-

changed—tentacles apart—half a dozen words with her which the Baron didn't hear none, I am certain, which the Baron was not intended to hear. Nor were there any of those conscious glances to be intercepted, which really tell a man more of the state of a case than all the words of a *tête-à-tête* put together. Hector, who had ordinarily about as much tact as a tortoise, seemed to have understood at once with whom he was dealing. Helena was divinely simple, as he had said, and therefore divinely guarded. An angel with a sword stood upon her quiet brows. Hector must have seen him there, and respected the good cross on his shield. But I know that he was deeply in love with her, because he was so happy.

He was at that stage of love when the consciousness of love itself is a triumph. It is the elated feeling which a poet has when he has written a poem, which a hen has when she has laid an egg. You go clucking about; you lift your feet up; your head is in the stars. Such a spectacle is always exhilarating—I speak for myself, who am never bored with an ardent lover. Hector was one. He asked nothing, expected nothing and got nothing. And as he too was innocent, it never occurred

to him, at this stage of affairs, to consider curiously, to let his imagination range over the lives of these two ill-accorded beings—this stricken hulk which had so little left him of mannishness but mannish appetite, and this late-flowering, bound and nobly reticent lady. Although his interest in Helena had been heightened, deepened, inflamed by her hard fate, remember that it had been there before. Her beauty had inspired it—and it was her beauty which washed out that temporary fever of interest, and remained as a holy and purely delightful possession of his. I speak of the first week of his admitted passion for Helena. What happened after that, while I was away, I shall have to report before I have done with this chapter of events

My own intercourse with the von Broderodes was casual and intermittent. We saluted each other when we met. The Baron used to wave his hand to me across the dining-room; once or twice a look passed between us which, on his side at least, was one of intelligence to impart. He seemed to be telling me that he knew all about it. And I'll go bail that he did. He was so very much on the spot, as Chevenix would have said. His was the whip hand,

you see He drove on the snaffle, and she had a tender mouth. He knew all about that; and I thought that he wished *me* to know that he did. More than once, certainly, I saw his watchful blue eyes fixed upon me—to see how I was taking Hector's devotion and her calm acceptance of it. It seems absurd—but once I am morally certain that he winked It was when Hector was holding silk for her to wind. To be sure, a man does not look at his best when he is at that duty, and assuredly, if he is not a lover, he is a fool, according to Baron von Broderode

One day—it was in the garden and after tea—it so happened that I found myself walking with the Baroness I am not sure that she did not contrive it. Hector was held in talk by the Baron, and she, with what was practically an invitation, got up and began to walk the grass. I followed her.

She began to question me about Hector's people—with really very little preface. She said that she liked him very much, she felt sure that he must be "noble," because he was so sincere, and took so much for granted. I told her that he was what she would call noble, but pointed out that in Britain we had both nobility and rank Hector's rank, I



said, was not very great—not so great as her own—but his nobility was as fine as you please. Sir Roderick, I told her, was a kind of petty king in his own country.

She pondered this. What did I mean, exactly ? I told her that there were some three or four thousand people who would profess it their duty to shed their blood for Sir Roderick Malleson ; and that when Sir Roderick died, Hector would be Sir Hector, and might look for the same devotion.

She said that that was like Hungary, and that her own country had been like that too, once upon a time

I said, “ You are a Pole, Baroness ? ”

“ Yes,” she said, “ I am a Pole, but there is no Poland now.”

She returned to the Mallesons. Hector had brothers, she had been told. Did I know them ? I told her that I knew them all. Hector was the eldest. Then there were Nigel, a sailor, Spenser, a priest, Wynyard and Pierpoint, who were twins, and Patrick. There were no daughters.

Were they much alike ? she wanted to know. I told her that physically they were divided into camps. Hector, Nigel the sailor, and Patrick who was at Oxford, were all

dark, like their mother, who had been a dark, slim, grey-eyed woman. The middle three favoured the father, tall and broad-shouldered, fair-haired young men. I told her that these three had been a great trio in their day.

She bent her brows. "But their day is not over?"

I told her, no indeed. But Spenser, who had been brought up by the Jesuits, was now a priest and in China and as for the twins, they had separated widely as they had grown up. Pierpoint was a soldier, and Wynyard a mighty hunter. Fine young men both, but very unlike in character.

She absorbed my information. "Tell me more about them," she said very simply. I gave her thumbnail sketches of Pierpoint's gallant ways, and of Wynyard the lean and silent. Then I threw her off a portrait of the old chief himself. "You would like him," I assured her. "He is the finest and the youngest of them all. His faith never fails him."

"His faith in what?" she asked.

"In himself," I said. "He is in his way a king of men. Indeed, he is actually that. There was the case of a man in his country who got a summons for debt. He brought it

up to the chief to know what he ought to do about it I assure you that the King's writ runs there on sufferance "

She wasn't good at little jokes. She took that quite sedately "But your friend, Mr. Hector—" she began again—"he is the heir, as you say. Do they—has he got authority—I don't know how to put it, but I suppose he would have to exercise some sort of authority in such a house ? "

"He hasn't been called upon for any as yet," I said, smiling, "but I think that he could be trusted There has been no mutiny so far "

She trembled upon her next question "His father—are they good friends ? "

I didn't know where she was leading me—I evaded "Oh, well, you know, he's the heir, and of course there are difficulties—but on the whole I don't think they do so badly." I wasn't going to tell her everything—for instance, that old Sir Roderick was only fond of Hector when he wasn't there The truth, of course, was that they were too much alike ever to get on.

Presently she began again—and I began to see where I was. "Mr Malleson has invited us to Inveroran," she said, "and I think my

husband would like to go. But I feel that it is rather a long journey for him. Nothing is decided."

"I am sure you would like Inveroran," I told her. "The place is really magnificent—fourteenth century, most of it; and as for the scenery—! No doubt, after your Carpathians, your Dolomites and your Alps, you would be exacting in that matter, but you must remember that in Scotland they have the sea as a foreground."

She smiled rather bleakly. "I don't think I am exacting," she said. Poor dear! I should think she wasn't.

By that time we were close to the others, and our conversation died out.

This was how the affair stood when I went away and left Hector behind me. I really wanted to do some work in Lombardy, I was no good to him where I was, and with matters in that trim, moreover, I admit, I judged that all was well. I trusted in her discretion as much as in his simplicity—but it seems that while you can push simplicity to the edge of a precipice you must not always expect it to drop meekly off into the mane. I hadn't taken the Baron's bravado into account—

and perhaps he hadn't either, himself. To put it quite shortly, after ten days' absence I had a telegram from Hector, asking me to meet him in Milan without fail

I hate the place, and was being cut off just when my work was beginning to arrange itself—I was doing a map of Roman Lombardy—but of course I went

I found him pacing the hall of the hotel, jumping from lozenge to lozenge of the chequered pavement, in a pair of red morocco slippers. His hands behind his back, his head bent, his brows knitted, he seemed to be concentrated upon his ridiculous exercise. He looked like a young crane learning his father's daily antics. It was some time before he saw me watching him, and when he did, he stood where he was, balancing on one foot (exactly covering a black lozenge) and in his turn looked at me

"Hulloa," I said—we had the place practically to ourselves. There was a page-boy asleep in a corner, his arms on the desk.

I got a rocking-chair and sat in it. I lit a cigarette. "Well?" I said. "What is it? A crisis?"

He hovered about me. "Yes," he said. "I don't know what to do next."

I strangled a guffaw at birth. "You must tell me first what you have done last I suppose you have made love to her?"

He shook this away, as if it was water in his ear. "Don't talk rot, please I haven't come to this beastly town, or pulled you into it, to talk about love-making. This is a matter of life and death"

"Whose life, my dear?" I said. "Whose death?"

"Her life," he told me then, "and anybody's death you please."

This annoyed me. "I wish you wouldn't talk minor poetry, Hector," I said. "Now look here. I must get you along. You have either said something that you ought not to have said or——"

"She knows, of course, that I love her. But that's an old story," said Hector. "I suppose she knew that the first evening."

"By wireless," I said. "By your tentacles—and hers, of course."

He nodded. "That's it. Yes, of course. But she knows it explicitly now I told her."

"Oh, you did, did you? Well, what did she say?"

He became inspired "Such women have no need to speak. She looked at me. I read every word she said. I accepted every command she laid upon me. There was nothing to do I had said to her, 'You know that I love you You know that I would die for you' I read her answer 'Yes, I know it. But to die for me would be too easy. I ask you to live for me'"

I held my tongue from handling this flippantly. Poor fellow, it was serious enough this time Presently I said that I considered her answer a good one "If you have read her message rightly—and I expect you have—you can only obey. But there's more to come"

"There is," he said "I tell you plainly, I don't know what to do"

He became very much agitated He took a quick turn over the hall, and when he came back he seemed panic-stricken He came to me all alight with the truth. His eyes were like fires—fires in daylight—for he had no colour.

"I must tell you," he said, breathing short. "The man's a ghoul."

I had nothing to say. I waited. But I remembered what Van Ruyver had said, on

the night of our first acquaintance with the pan, about squeezing the last drops out of life

“He lives on her. He fastens himself Day by day. Andromeda white at the stake—enfolded—day by day”

I kept my eyes upon him. With the eyes only I inquired of his trouble.

He answered my unvoiced question “Yes, he does. She is his, body and blood. Seven years of it—seven years—” Incoherence followed, which I don’t attempt to put down.

He had fought with it for nearly a week I’ll undertake to maintain that he fought desperately, that it was a tooth-and-nail business But it beat him, and changed everything The affair would, but for that, have run a normal course. He would have adored her near and far for a season, but with the fair one in Austria and the swain in Scotland or parts adjacent that season would not have been a long one But now there was something added. The imagination was inflamed beyond quenching The first momentary fire—when he saw the man come dragging himself down the passage in pursuit—had been a flicker. His native wholesomeness had put that out. Not so now. He knew the facts.

I did what I could for him, all that an older



and a cooler head can do for a man in such a state But he fought me all along the line.

I said, "You have done a fatal thing You have looked where you ought not——"

"It's not true," he said holly. "He took me in—to show me a photograph."

"Very well, I'll admit it," I told him, "but still I say that you should have refused to consider. That, believe me, is the only possible course. That's the way of sanity. Don't ask me how people feel about these things. We've agreed to put a sanctity about life. What is a sanctity but a hedge? Woe to him who peers through. Very properly he gets the worst of it Now here, you can do nothing—except go away. You've done that—and I hope you'll stick to it"

He was jumping about—all round me. "I don't know what I shall do yet. I know that I must do something"

"What on earth—" I began to say.

He said, "There are plenty of things that I might do. I think she knows it."

"She may very well fear the only thing that you could do," I told him.

He simply laughed at me . a mirthless laugh. "Oh, you fool," he said. "I don't want to do anything to her. Do you think I can't

be trusted ? You ought to know me by this time ”

“ Then, what *do* you want with her ? ” I asked him.

“ I want her to be free,” he said. “ As free as the wind. You may say what you please about your sanctified hedges ; but surely you see that every soul is responsible to itself. The hedge is there—from birth It is not I who violate it. God help her, that was done long ago.”

We lunched, and I got some more positive information out of him. The von Broderodes had left Gironeggio. *He* had gone to Galicia and was going on from there to Petersburg ; thence to Moscow where he had many friends and would stay for a month at least He had his man with him, and the Italian woman Teresa Visconti, without whom he never travelled a yard *She* was to be in Vienna with the child In the autumn they were all coming to Inveroran. The Baron intended to shoot, it seems

In this state of affairs, what did Hector intend to do ? He said that he should go home, he thought. She was happy where she was—which was all he seemed to care

about. He should certainly not go to Vienna. She wouldn't like it—nor would he. Yes, he intended to write to her. He had done so already, but she hadn't answered him yet. He didn't care if she did—much

His passion had left him. He was depressed and despondent.

I said, "I hope you mean to have me at Inveroran. Your friends interest me very much. I expect to see some fine shooting from the Baron."

He drearily agreed with me. "I imagine that he has shot most things shootable in his day," he said. "I don't suppose he has missed much."

"You are not in the mood to do him justice," I said. "Personally, I admire him. He's putting up a great fight for it. You'll see, he'll go down with his colours nailed to the mast."

Hector turned rather green, and shut his eyes. "We won't talk about him just now," he said, and then, "Damn him—he's a ghoul."

## V . INVERORAN

THE famous prayer, " Bless, we beseech Thee, O Lord, Great and Lesser Cumbræ, and the adjacent islands of Great Britain and Ireland," may well have been put up at Inveroran, where, as I happen to know, the King of England was looked upon as a neighbouring monarch. It was Sir Roderick's factor who remarked to me, on the occasion of a royal visit, when, after a Highland gathering, his Majesty drove off, accompanied by his host, " They'll be glad to be by themselves, no doubt " I must say that I like that sort of thing Race interests me more than anything in the world, and up there you get it pure and strong. You feel a very long way from England at Inveroran.

The Castle stands finely on the rising ground above the bay, which has so narrow an entrance that it has all the appearance of an inland water. Below the gates of the policies the little white town begins, and straggles down to the quay and harbour. A steamer from

Glasgow puts in twice a week in the summer, once a week in the winter, and when south-westerly winds are blowing very often not that. The moors stretch out in a demi-lune on either side of you; and then over the first ridge you come to the deer forest. They say that you would hardly ride out of Malleson land in a day if you chose to go north-east. Personally, I have never tried. I am no sportsman myself, and have no need to pretend to be. It used to be one of the minor afflictions of poor Hector's life-days that, next in succession as he was, he was an extremely bad performer with the rifle, while his younger brothers were of the best. Wynyard, especially, was a crack shot.

They were all there for the shooting that year, except Nigel the sailor, who was at Malta, and Spenser the priest, still a missionary and martyr-elect in China. Wynyard was there, as always, and in first-rate form, and Pierpoint, the splendid young man, whom some of us called George IV, because he had the flushed and triumphant look of Lawrence's portrait of the youthful monarch, and some the Apollo Belvedere; and young Patrick, too, a cool hand—or, as von Broderode would say, a cool cucumber. I told him that joke

before the visitors came, and it was the aim of his soul to make him say it. As a matter of fact, the young ass said it himself before the Baron had been in the place an hour, and the Baron spotted it instantly as a wrong idiom. He turned it very cleverly on Pat: "What you call a cool cucumber," he used to say to him, fixing him with his galliard blue eye. That is only one of a thousand instances when von Broderode turned a retreat into a victory. How the man had time, where he found zest for such little affairs was a marvel to me

There were the usual sort of people there to meet them. Some off-hand girls, very sketchily dressed, rather cynical and extremely wiry; their mothers or not, as the case might be—there's no rule, a couple of colonels who shot all day and played bridge all night. One of them made money at it—and "By Gad, I want it," he told me, and I believed him. Then there was Lord Mark, who is a Malleson uncle by the mother's side, and his wife, American and rather stodgy. There were others, but they don't matter—youth from Oxford, speechless to the likes of me, but very eloquent at side-tables. And that's all.

I was there before the von Broderodes came, when, in fact, there was daily and gay speculation about them. To Patrick he was the "German Johnny" or "Old Two-Sticks"—which made Sir Roderick fume and scowl. Checked there, Pat turned him into Sir Leoline, the Baron rich, which was safe, since his father knew not the bard, but had horrid implications as to what he had or had not in his company very useful against Hector on occasion. Sir Roderick didn't mind what was said so long as it was admitted that the von Broderodes were not German. He hated the Germans and thought that they intended the destruction of our realms, though not, of course, that they would succeed. To him it was very important that the Baron was Austrian—"Old friends of ours, the Austrians—a fine people, sir." He thought to call your prospective guest Old Two-Sticks was offensive—"Damned offensive, sir, if you ask me." Here he would square his fine old shoulders, and light a fire in his dark blue eyes, with the ridiculous effect that he looked younger than his youngest son. But you couldn't stop them. The Baroness, also, was "the inexpressible She" or "the ship-launcher" in allusion to her name. I remem-

ber that at the moment of her coming into the hall for dinner, the first night of the visit, Patrick whispered to me, "Was *this* the face . ?" and added afterwards to a younger friend, "By Gad, it might be." He was much impressed, as they all were, by her charm of quiet. All this speculative pleasantry was flying about *ad libitum*, before they came Hector, that ostrich, buried his head, and gave the rest of himself away. He used to speak of Helena with elaborate unconcern, as if he hadn't thought of her much up to now. "Good-looking? Yes, I fancy you would call her good-looking—in a placid, sort of nun-like way." He infuriated Pierpoint by that. "Look here, Hector," that flushed and really noble-looking youth cried out at him, "are you going to sit there and tell me she's demure?" Hector said that he was going to sit there and tell him nothing. Patrick suggested that perhaps she was "arch." Wynyard, who was eating muffins, said that we should try the Knockacarrig beat to-morrow. The wind was right. He couldn't see what use there was in discussing the appearance of a woman who wasn't there and whom nobody but Hector had seen. Patrick jumped up to confute him. If, he



said, she *was* there, you naturally couldn't discuss her, and if everybody had seen her it wouldn't be worth while. What did Wynyard say to that? Wynyard said nothing to it, but finished the muffins, and then asked if anybody would play squash with him before dinner. That was how they went on all the time, sparring and wrangling. But they were very close-knit for all that. It meant nothing. If you touched one of them you touched the whole pack, and Sir Roderick first of all. There was something fine about that old giant when he was in a rage. You forgot how stupid he was.

Hector set great store by this visit of his lady and her grim possessor. He made me his confessor shortly after I came, telling me that when he left me in Milan in the spring he had indeed gone home—but by way of Venice and Vienna! There he had been in her company for two clear days. She had not been offended—far from it. She had never been kinder to him than she had then proved herself. Heavenly creature! he said, she had seemed to know that he would come. she had seemed touched by it. That a woman should be grateful to you for what is the act

of sheer self-gratification! Can anything be more beautifully condescending than that? It is innate courtesy of the most exquisite refinement. And not a cloud in the sky—not a cloud! She gave up all her engagements on his account. They spent their days in the galleries—the evenings in her fine house. There were people there, of course—a soft-footed priest with a white head, he told me, a Monsignore who seemed to be a relative of hers; a Miss Waggetts who was governess to Hermione; a mysterious old black-browed lady with a name like Korsaczy, who always looked as if a thunder-storm was going on in the top of her head. That was because she blinked. You thought of lightning. Helena didn't explain any of these people to him, nor (he supposed) himself to them. She had a way of murmuring names in the air, and leaving them to be sorted by their owners. He laughed the laugh of a lover. "I adore her dependence on Providence," he said, "but she is undeniably vague sometimes. The Korsaczy didn't catch my name at all, and had it out of me afterwards. She didn't like it when she had it. She said it sounded like a curse. Malison—do you see? Clever of her. The *tu quoque* was

obvious, but I let it go. She didn't like me, but that didn't matter. It was beautiful to see her—I mean Helena—with Hermione. A tall, creamy-skinned, grave child with her mother's deep grey eyes and cloudy hair. Nothing was said of the satyr—bah! we won't talk of him. Hermione used to lean against her mother's knee while I was there talking; and every now and then they used to look at each other and smile. It was like the sun breaking out—one used to wait for it. The second of my days she touched me to the point of tears. It was after luncheon. I was following them out of the room, and in the corridor Hermione waited for me, and held out her hand. We went on handfasted. A child's confidence is worth having. That makes a man think himself somebody." I agreed with him.

There was more to come. I knew that and waited for it. Presently he said, "Her patience is exquisite. It's so beautiful that sometimes I think what she goes through may be worth while—to secure it to her, don't you see? You know how I look upon Beauty, as being so much the assurance of a virtue that it becomes a virtue in itself. It follows that any indignity offered to Beauty—especially

Spiritual Beauty, as Helena's is—is a thing unendurable; it's like winking at obscenity, it's like allowing immorality in your own house. I had a long talk with her about that—I couldn't say much, naturally—but she knew what I meant. I said that a man knows that he's a good poet, or linguist, or chemist, and takes his stand in the world on that ground. It seemed to me that a woman must know not only the fact of her beauty, but also the rights due to it. Without vanity she seeks to enhance it, taking thought for her clothes, her hair and things like that. Is she not entitled to say to the world 'This beauty of mine, which you admit by your words, you shall admit also by your acts? No man in the world has a right over it but by free grant from me.' I didn't put it so crudely as that—I didn't dot the *i*'s or cross all the *t*'s—but I took pains about it.

"She was very gentle with me. I think that she was moved. She said that I had high standards, which were not common. In her country, she said, men talked like that before they married, but that, being married, they only talked so to other men's wives. I told her that England stood in no better case; but did all this matter? Could brutish

behaviour alter eternal laws? She sighed as she said that custom had the force of law. And then, as if to end the discussion, she bent over her netting and said, 'You mustn't be unhappy I shall be disappointed if I think that you go home unhappy. I promise you that I shall remember our talks, and be the more contented for them I haven't many friends—but I count upon your friendship. It is a great thing for me'

"Upon my soul, I dared not say any more. She asked me not to write to her often—not more than twice, she said. It was understood that they were to come here I think I wrote three times She answered one letter of mine—but that's all"

"Do you think—?" I began to ask him a question which I might have had some difficulty in completing. But he answered it as it was

"No, I don't. I don't think she has any love of that kind for anybody. I think she is too out of the world for love, as the world understands it. I doubt if the feelings of ordinary women mean anything to her. But I do think that she is pleased with me. She listens to me, and thinks about what I say. Yes, I do think so."

"What do you suppose *he* thinks about it, Hector?" I asked him.

"I don't know," he said, "and don't care, at present He may be troublesome later on"

I pressed him "What do you mean—later on?"

"I mean," he said, "when he knows what I am up to—and that I don't mean to leave him alone"

I deprecated "Really, I don't know how you can keep his company," I said. "Mind you, he's very intelligent"

"Oh, damnably," said Hector "But so is she."

"Well, my dear chap?"

Hector got up and plunged his hands into his pockets "Well, it's got to this. She is used to him He's horrible, but she's used to him and his horrors. And now—well—now she has begun to find out that she ought not to be"

I looked at him "You mean to say that you've laid a drawn sword——?"

He met me. "I mean to say that I have proved to her own conviction that she is a beautiful woman," he said—and then, "We must go and dress."

I don't seek to excuse my friend, indeed, I suppose that if he was in love with Helena von Broderode he is to be excused for his intromission in her private affairs. It didn't, at the time, seem to me to amount to much. Not to more than this, perhaps, that it amounted to just as much or just as little as she chose to make it stand for. And after all is said and done, hedges only exist in love to be broken through. The state of his feelings magnified the offences of the unfortunate Baron—offences, mind you, that were mere guess-work on Hector's part; they magnified also the distress of the Baroness—guess-work again. My distinct opinion is that the Baroness wasn't particularly uncomfortable with her Baron's attentions until she found Hector scandalized about it. She had been married twelve years. The Baron's malady didn't attack him until half that time had expired. I doubt her extreme sensibility. I think she was of a placid nature, if you ask me. I felt very strongly at the time that if distress existed in the Baroness it was almost entirely because Hector had put it there. I am bound to say that that was wanton of him, too bad; and I don't think that any flummery about the sovereign

rights of Beauty will excuse a man making a beauty uncomfortable. I beg Hector's pardon. Hector was a poet, it may be—for you can be a poet without making any poems. I imagine that Beauty was to him a very tangible thing—a kind of gloss upon things and persons (mostly persons, I am bound to say, and mostly, too, female persons) which might be, in his eyes, visibly tarnished. But, the plain truth is, Hector's idealism of beauty was pure sex—nothing else at all. If it had not been so, there was his brother Pierpoint, for example—the most beautiful creature in these islands—a miracle of grace and strength, the perfection of line and colour, and rare blood and high spirit. a creature like a god. Yet Hector never saw beauty like a gloss upon him. No, no. He was in love with Helena—as well he might be, he was in love with her after his own—as I think—rather anæmic fashion. He perched her up on a five-foot pedestal—so that her head was at least ten feet in the air. And then he called out to the world in general, “I have found a woman who is ten feet high. She must be an immortal. Come, we will turn her into a church. No man must smoke a cigar, or spit, or scratch his head, or go to sleep near her. One does



not do these things in churches, and I tell you that you are in church where she is." That's how sex takes you. Sheer sex . nothing else at all.

I couldn't say this to him, and it would have been little use if I had. As things turned out, I am glad that I did not, for the very peculiar twist in Hector's nature made him fairly comfortable in the most uncomfortable position—without any exception—in which amorous man ever found himself. But one thing at a time. We haven't reached that yet.

In days to come I remembered that talk with Hector. It was the night before the von Broderodes were due.

And I remember another thing not at the time memorable. I remember coming out of my room and passing Pierpoint's on my way to the staircase. Just before I reached his door it opened, but nobody came out. I heard his voice saying with emphasis, "No, not to-night. It's out of the question. You know that as well as I do." Then I suppose my steps were heard, the door was closed again, and held-to until I had turned the corner by the stair. On the way downstairs Pierpoint, coming three at a time, bumped into

me and saved himself by clinging round my neck. "Frightfully sorry," he panted. "You see, I thought I was late. And you know what the governor is Baulked of his prey!"

"Come on," I said, "we'll brazen it out between us. I heard you as I passed your door. You were rather positive, I thought. I was on the point of looking in."

He gave me a sharp look. For a second or two it was intense. Then he laughed. "Quite as well you didn't, old chap." That was what he said.

## VI THE STATE VISIT

SIR RODERICK was a dear old man, whose besetting sin was vanity. He had been a splendid specimen of mankind in his day—and he still was the perfection of hale, frosty, alert old age—and I suspect that his excessive partiality for Pierpoint sprang from that. He renewed his youth in that hero, he saw himself in his acts, and all the admiration which the youth won for himself—which was inordinate—he applied like ointment to his own old person. But that is parenthesis. One of the by-products of his vanity was that in order to magnify himself he had to magnify everything to do with himself. His stags had to be bigger than any other man's stags, his gillies tougher than any other man's gillies; his housemaids better-looking than any other man's housemaids. One of them certainly was, by the way. Ethel Cook was her name. She was supposed to be the best-looking housemaid in the world. I remember that he was bragging about the maids at Inveroran one

day—how good they were, how long they stayed, what fine girls and all that. It was after breakfast. He and I were in the hall. “You shall see for yourself,” he said. He rang the bell and told the man to fetch Ethel. I couldn’t tell him—hadn’t the heart—that I knew all about her, that she was famous in her way. He must have known that I had danced with her at the servants’ ball every year since she had been there—but nothing would do. Down she must come. By and by, sure enough, down she came. Undoubtedly she was magnificent—about five foot eight, with a fine, small head on her shoulders, and a grave, self-possessed pair of grey eyes. He gave her an order about something or other, and kept her for a while talking. She was perfectly respectful, but not at all uneasy. Then he sent her off. “That young woman has been here for seven years,” he told me. I knew she had. “She came at sixteen.” I knew that too. “She’s now twenty-three. I respect her, sir. She’s made herself respected. And look at her. She’s one of the family. She declines to marry, though half the men in the place would go through the fire for her. But no! And she comes from the South—a Gloucestershire girl. Now, they are all of that

pattern Let me tell you this . . ." and then the dear old gas-bag puffed out his chest, and stroked his beard, and went off again.

That is another parenthesis, which I must be excused What I am coming to is that, owing to this little weakness of his—of magnifying himself in his circumstance—there was some danger, perfectly visible to the family, of his turning the von Broderode visit into an act of international courtesy. He might very easily have had the town be-flagged. Triumphant arches were talked of, and the German dictionary got out Patrick staved that off by insisting on Polish—for the Baroness He said that it wasn't like his father to ignore the rights of a crushed and beaten race. "Do you think," he said, "that she don't get enough German rubbed into her in Galicia? And you expect her to come here and find German inscriptions?" That was the way to get at him—to be as literal as himself Sir Roderick was touched. "You are right, my lad," he said. "It would be a great want of tact. No, no That would never do" So we got off the arches But the whole course of a week bristled with pitfalls. Should there be an address at the station? Should he himself be on the platform? A red baize, now? The pipes?

One thing he had so set his heart on that it stabbed us to ours to deny it him. He saw a group of us all on the steps to await the carriage—himself in the midst of his tall sons—guests in wicker chairs—Lord Mark in his yeomanry uniform—then men holding dogs in leashes—the servants in white caps, or with livery buttons looking like pills on the photograph—! It was to be like the pictures of the German Emperor at a wedding. Really, he was so unhappy when the boys flatly refused, one after the other, that I was fool enough to say I'd do it, and Lady Mark backed me up and I went so far as to say she would like it. But the boys were of sterner stuff. Patrick said he'd do it on one condition, which was that he should wear his bathing-suit and carry a parasol. Pierpoint and Wynyard, the twins should sit at each corner in huge turn-down collars—perhaps with banjoes. The poor old dear saw that it was no go, and gave it up. "It would have been a graceful act, sir," he said to me. "That was how we received the late King—and the King was pleased. He as good as said so. But, however—" He was dreadfully hurt, very stately and remote to Pat, pressed the port on me—told me its year and all that—offered me a cigar! In fact,

he sulked in a very dignified way all dinner-time

After a series of pounding defeats like this we became magnanimous and let him win a couple of outpost skirmishes. He was allowed the great carriage instead of the motor. Hector went down in it to please him. And the Castle pipers were at the station with their bags of tricks under their arms. We even let him have that. Being a Southron myself, like Miss Ethel Cook, I saw no religious significance in these chaps, and got all the more pleasure out of them. I love them above all on these sort of days of pomp. They always bring me tears. I can see them now in that breezy, dusty station yard, stalking up and down like high-stepping cocks, or standing together, discoursing of great affairs with each other, in an open-mouthed circle of bare-footed boys. And when the train was signalled, the toss of the head as each met the other's eye! And when it was in sight, the long wheeze of preparation! And then the outburst—the crash, the triumphant scream—and the march away up the street! I love it, I tell you—and it nearly always makes me cry. I think that fair Helen was moved too. As for the Baron,

I'll swear that he didn't miss anything. He never did.

Our part up at the house—since the whole thing had got on our nerves—was to be as unconcerned as possible. We would *not* be on the steps. Sir Roderick should have them to himself. Those of us who were at home—all the men except myself and Hector were on the moors, and a good many of the women—obstinately sat in the hall with the tea-things. Lady Mark—as bad as any of us by now—insisted on my playing draughts with her. She said it would look “informal”, she thought it would “put them at their ease”. Amusing way of putting the Cool Cucumber at his ease! He might be trusted to do that for himself.

When Sir Roderick brought her in, Lady Mark's informality ceased. She was much too interested in Hector's “passion,” as she called Helena. She saw instantly that she was all right—and she certainly was. I'm no good at lady's dresses—broad effects for me. I content myself by recording that it was black and white, that it seemed to drape her and be unwilling to leave her, if you understand me. It looked to me very expensive.



Then she had an early Victorian hat, a long, drooping, flagged affair, with a black feather. It was very big and very black. It set her pale face off—it made that look like a moon steering through a dark rain-cloud. And there was Hector, adoring her from a respectful distance in the background! She knew it and how immensely touched and gratified she was with it all! So much for that. She smiled a very friendly greeting to me and allowed me to kiss her hand—anyhow, that is what I took upon me to do. She was quite self-possessed and, if I may say so, ready for anything. She felt herself, very pardonably, to be making an effective entrance. Every woman knows that kind of thing.

Hector waited upon the Baron, as I supposed; and pretty soon I heard the two sticks and guessed at the dragging glide. At the open door he stood to rest, propped upon them, confronting the citadel, as it were, with the gallant and weathered eye of an old campaigner. Here he was then—up against it. He must have known it. He took us all in at a glance; he sized the whole thing up. He was hard put to it for his breath, I guess; but he masked his fatigue with that dauntless smile of his which always



AND TRULY SOON I HEARD THE TWO STICKS VOICELESS  
AT THE DRAGGING CHIDE



endeared him to me, ghoul or no ghoul. A cool cucumber indeed was the Baron von Broderode.

And how he played up at the tea-table ! How he massed his forces for the attack on his traitor tell-tale hands, how he was beaten, how he returned to the assault again and again ! How he talked, joked, relished everything through what must have been devastating efforts ! After all, a man with a zest like that *was* a man. Lady Mark told me afterwards that she thought him a *dangerous* man, because, forsooth, " he took so much for granted." I discovered after a bit what she meant. He had taken her nationality for granted. He told her in a few minutes that he knew America, and even surmised that she came from New England—which, in fact, she did. I suppose it was a shot ; but it was just like him (*a*) to have made it, (*b*) to have been right. Mrs. Vane, too, who was the wife of the money-hunting Colonel—he was ready for her. He told her he had met a Captain Vane in India—and gave the year. It was the Colonel ! You couldn't get away from the Baron anywhere, even on the wings of the morning.

After tea, although it was getting dusk, Sir Roderick had them out into the gardens. The

Baron excused himself and retired to his rooms, where I suppose his man and his Teresa had got things snug for him. He had brought his Teresa. Helena went off between father and son; and in due course we all took our ways. The shooters came in late, and her first public appearance was before dinner.

They were all assembled when she came downstairs. Even the Baron had got himself down before her. She not only looked very beautiful, but extremely young for her thirty. It was then that Patrick said that hers might be the face that had the ships

“Crowded in Aulis like white buds”

She was in black—with the family diamonds, or some of them, in her hair.

Sir Roderick, with his infallible eye for stage-sentiment, had his young men about him, and presented them formally. Bearded, red Wynyard—“our mighty hunter, Baroness,” then Pierpoint, “like some hot amorist”—“and this is my scapegrace, Pierpoint,” who said, “You do me honour, sir,” and stooped burning bright over her. I saw her look up with her friendly smile—and then I saw her eyes flicker and fail. Then came Patrick, who introduced himself—“I’m Patrick

—how do you do ? ” He spared the rest of them. Lady Mark presented her lord, who bowed, and received a bow. Then the pipes burst out—the Baron said Ha ! very loud, and we proceeded to dinner.

Dinner was rather heavy, I thought. There was too much of the banquet about it. Sir Roderick might have been the Lord Mayor entertaining royalty. There was nothing of the modern light hand about the old chief. On her other side there was Lord Mark, who did his best. You could describe Lord Mark best in wine-merchant language, as a perfect table wine, “very light and dry.” Hector was solemn, rather like a sweet port, Wynyard ate his food, and Pierpoint was bored. I had a girl to look after who had hitherto been at one of the round tables where the young things kept up their brisk cannonades of small jokes and bread pills. I too did my best, but she looked over her shoulder more than once, and more than once wondered “what they were doing.” I advised her finally to go there on all-fours and find out. She liked the idea, but funkcd it.

By far the best company was the Baron. He never gave in; he ate of everything;

drank champagne, made jokes and laughed at them; told anecdotes across the table; you never saw a man so much at ease in the midst of struggles which would have worn down Antæus. I didn't know whether to envy the more his spirit or his zest. Pierpoint interested him because of his perfections—I could see that. He talked across Lady Mark, and when the young man's attention wandered, he brought it back again by talking at him. He was evidently studying Pierpoint, and I wondered if he had seen that conquering glance before which his fair wife had abased her eyes. Was it possible that the Baron was a jealous husband? I certainly had reason to ask as time went on, because it became evident to everybody, almost from the start, that Pierpoint was out for scalps.

When we joined the ladies, things went much better. The bridge players roped in the Baron, as I knew they would. The heroic man assented, and I fancy that Colonel Vane dropped money. He had told me before dinner that he had won ten shillings off Patrick, on the moors, for two right-and-lefts running. "And by Gad, I wanted it!"—he had not

failed to add But I believe that he met his match in the Baron.

As for the others, there was to be a rag, Patrick said—and there was a rag We played all sorts of foolish games I only remember Forfeits because I have a vision of Pierpoint kneeling on one knee before Helena and telling her that she must “do something” to him.

She looked adorable—confused and happy at once. Her eyes very bright and kind. “What must I do to you?” she asked him.

He didn’t shirk it “You may do any mortal thing you like to me,” he said.

She hesitated, seemed to hover over him, then put her hand lightly on his shoulder for a minute and let it stay there.

“The accolade,” she told him

“I am your knight, then,” he said, “Knight of St. Helena” Then he got up. It was really very pretty.



## VII SETTLING IN

I HAD work to do which kept me at the desk all my mornings, so I am not clear as to the immediate course of events. There was great play, from the very beginning, but I can't be sure how it went. So far as I could judge from a few casual glimpses, or a gibe or two let fly by the youths, Pierpoint made the running. He was, of course, the beauty, and he founded himself upon that. Even Pat acknowledged a kind of *droit de seigneur* in his glowing brother. But the fact is that they took her to the family heart from the beginning, and to find out why they did would be a curious inquiry. My own belief is that it was because she was so evidently pleased to be there. Nothing pleases people so much as to discover that they are pleasing. That makes you enthusiastic. You say, What a delightful girl! She likes me! Every Malleson of them, I think, felt like that about Helena—from the chief, who adored women, especially young ones, and would have given

up his kingdom for a daughter, down to Patrick the insipient, who, for the matter of that, liked everybody I used to see her dance away in the moirings with a whole bevy of them about her, to see dogs, or to bathe, or sail, as the case might be; and it was delightful to note her intense appreciation of the flickering, random, high-spirited pack. If the chief went with them she used to affect sedateness and stay behind to talk, or rather to hear him talk. He showed her views, trees planted by crowned heads, funeral mounds of old horses, dogs' tombstones, and all the rest of it. She bent him filial attention—and he revelled in it. Once she went off for a walk with Hector, but only once, so far as I know. I used to imagine that she and Hector had an understanding by which they could take each other's feelings for granted—but I'm not so sure about it now. Wynyard was the dark horse of the lot. He took her very bluntly after his manner. The more he had liked her the less he would have shown it. I knew that and used to watch for it. I noticed a curt address of her once or twice. She was considering whether she should go out with the shooters. He said he didn't think it was the place for women. I saw her bite her lip.

As for the Baron, they fitted him up with a pony and took him out every day. I understood from Wynyard, who was an expert, that he did very well. "Gets his gun up like lightning and fires at the instant. He's a sportsman." This was high praise from Wynyard, and a long speech from the silent man of the house. But the Baron was a great success, and I gathered from his expansion at dinner that he knew it, and that all went well with him. He, too, pleased, and was pleased.

*She*, oddly enough, did not do so well with the women. They were a little bit cool to her, it seemed. Lady Mark said that she was secretive. I don't quite know what she meant, unless it was that Helena didn't choose to talk about her admirers as if they were pet dogs. The girls, too, were a little bit jealous—perhaps they thought her too young for her age—and perhaps, poor dear, she was. She had every excuse if, as I expect, she had never been young before. Hector took her out riding one or two days, but not alone; one day she was on the moors—at Wynyard's invitation. She marched about with guns, lunched at a sheiling, and was rather bored. That may have been because

shooting under Wynyard's marshalling was apt to be so mighty serious. She confessed to Hector afterwards that she didn't like to see things killed, although she thought we did it as kindly as it could be done. She was greatly struck by British kindness, and disposed to trust it a very long way. She told me that in a half-hour of expansion. "I have never been in England before—" she began, and I thought I had better tell her that she wasn't in England now. "No, no," she said, "I know—I have made that blunder already. Patrick stopped me. I hope Sir Roderick didn't hear me. But at home we have the habit of talking of you all as the English."

"We'll let it pass this time," I said, and then invited her to proceed.

She said, "I am lost in admiration at two things. First, that you are so good-looking, and next that you are so gentle. I think it is because you are proud. It seems beneath your dignity to be savage, or to speak disdainfully to servants."

I said that I thought we were rather slack than proud. "It's not worth while being angry with a servant. The great thing is to let them alone. If that don't answer, they

must go. That's how we look at it, I think."

She wasn't listening, but seemed lost in reverie. Then she said, "They are awfully kind to me—and all for nothing, but gentleness!"

I said, "It would be very hard to be anything but gentle in your case."

She was pleased. "Ah," she said, "you have no idea how grateful I am for kindness. It touches me deeply—always."

"Surely," I said, "you must be prepared for that"

She misunderstood me "You mean—by Mr. Malleson—Mr. Hector? Yes, indeed I think he has very noble ideals. He seems to me a beautiful nature—but——"

I waited

"But—" she didn't know how to put it—then gave it up. "Tell me about the others. What do they do? Do they always lead this happy life? Have they no professions? One is in the marine, I think? That is Mr. Nigel, who is not here?" I nodded. "Then one is in Orders—in our Church?"

"Yes," I said. "Spenser Malleson's a priest. And a missionary at that. He's out in China, waiting for the toasting-fork."

"And Mr. Wynyard—what does Mr. Wynyard do when he is not killing?"

I laughed "He prepares to kill. He does nothing else. But he's a great naturalist. He kills in kindness. He's awfully fond of birds, really. You may not agree, but that's why he's such a good shot."

She said, "I would agree if I understood" After a bit she said, with a quite perceptible taking of breath, "And Pierpoint—Mr. Pierpoint?"

"Pierpoint," I told her, "is a soldier. He's cavalry—a Lancer. But he's on leave now. He's a fine-looking boy, don't you think?"

She looked down "He is very handsome. I don't think I have ever seen a man so handsome. But you call him a boy?"

"I call him a boy," I said, "because I am forty-two."

She looked up. "And he is——?"

"I don't know to a year how old Pierpoint is," I said, though it wasn't true "But he is not forty-two, I assure you"

She laughed "No, indeed. But one sees he is not a boy."

"No, no," I said "It was only a figure of speech. He is full-grown."

There we came to a stop about Pierpoint—

or it seemed so. She made a wide cast, and began again on Hector.

"Mr Hector," she said, "is very unlike his brothers."

"Yes," I admitted "He is unlike all that you see here Physically, he's like Patrick Don't you see it ? They favour their mother's family. She was Lord Mark's sister Morally, he's like Spenser, the priest. An enthusiast, an idealist of a rather pronounced type. Everything is either coal-black or snow-white to Hector. He don't know the word compromise. But he's very pussy about it. He keeps quiet till he's wanted—or thinks that he's wanted."

Her eyes shone "Yes, that is so true I wished to ask you about that. As you say, he is very quiet, very gentle But these others—they are strong, they are swift and proud They are like their father—what a fine man he is ! He knows that he is a king. He walks the world as if it was his. But when Hector is head of the house—or as he is now, the heir of it—how does he exert authority ? Or has he no authority over them ? Do they listen to his advice ? Do they obey him ? He is so quiet !"

I laughed—not derisively at all—apprecia-

tively rather "Yes, he is quiet," I said. "You might call him mild. But they know better. I feel sure—I know—that when he takes Sir Roderick's place he will have the power which Sir Roderick has. If he were to say to Wynyard, 'Look here, it is absolutely necessary for my health that you should drown yourself to-morrow morning in the bay,' Wynyard would do it"

She said, "You are laughing at me"

I assured her that I was not. "It's an extreme case, of course, but the principle is sound. Convince one of these fellows that it is up to him to do something for Hector's sake—he'll do it. He must"

She took that very seriously. She liked it. I went on. "Mind you, there's the other side of the proposition, which is equally binding. I know that Hector would go the same lengths for one of them. He would stick at nothing. He would see it as his duty. He would stick at nothing on earth. And, of course, they know that. Both terms of the proposition are in the blood. They've been bred to it."

She had me then. "Do you think that the priest would be like that—like the others?" That was clever of her.



I said, "Spenser is a priest. He's not a Jesuit, but they reared him. That's an iron system I won't answer for Spenser. But I'll tell you this Hector might think it his duty to be burned at the stake for Spenser—and burned he would be."

She thanked me for talking to her, which I assured her she needn't have done. It was exciting to watch her as she listened and thrilled. She was like some beautiful insect—with new wings quivering in the light. I wondered what would happen to her with Hector on one side of her, Pierpoint on the other—and the grim old Baron drinking cigar-smoke against the wall.

After a bit the positions began to shift, and develop themselves. Pierpoint openly paid court to her, and Hector wasn't happy. That was clear enough to anybody. Old Miss Bacchus, who came up a day or two after the von Broderodes, took it all in the first night she was there. She went everywhere, as they say, and knew everybody. She was a hideous lady, with a red front of somebody else's hair—"another man's hair," as Patrick put it—but there was no nonsense about her. When we went into the drawing-room, and Pierpoint, as his custom now was,

went straight to Helena and sat by her, as if she belonged to him, Hector stood with his back to the fire and looked unutterable things. Miss Bacchus came and plumped down by me

"I say," she began, "I don't know what all this is about—do you?"

I said, "All what?" But it wouldn't do

"My dear man," she said, "why put it off? I'm like the dentist. You'll feel better afterwards"

I said, "I've a horror of your gouges. You call it moral pressure, I know. You should let a poor beggar alone. I never did you any harm"

"Look at her," said Miss Bacchus, and I did. "You know," she went on, "that woman has never been made a fuss about before, and she likes it—she likes it awfully. She'll lose her head—that's what she'll do. And Pierpoint's no good, you know. He's a rogue."

"Not a roguey-poguey, I trust," I said.

"No," she said, "that's the female of rogue. Now Hector wouldn't do her any harm"

"Wouldn't he?" I didn't want to discuss my friend's affairs with this too candid dame.

At this moment, without any warning, she fetched me a crack on the knee with her

fan. "You talk to Hector," she said. "He's your friend. You ought to."

"I'll tell him what you say," I told her. She snorted.

"For twopence I'd talk to him myself. But he wouldn't listen to me. He'd say it wasn't honourable."

"Well," I said, "there's something in that, you know."

Miss Bacchus scorned me. "You talk like Mr. Brooke. Honour be blowed. Look at Pierpoint. What does he think about? He's like a little dog or a little boy—he thinks of what he wants, and nothing else."

"That sort get on," I said.

"That sort get run over at a crossing pretty often," said Miss Bacchus.

"Baron von Broderode likes both of them," I told her. "But he likes Pierpoint best."

Miss Bacchus gave me a cool stare. "Is that your little idea?" she said. "Well, let me tell you that you are dead wrong. The Baron dislikes Pierpoint extremely."

"My dear friend, how *do* you know that?" I asked her.

"Because," she said, "he is so friendly with him. Don't you see that the Baron never shirks a thing? Don't you see that

he comes to terms with it—whether it's a man after his wife, or locomotor ataxy after him—he'll never compromise. Come on, he says, let's have a look at you. God bless me, where are your eyes ? ”

“ They are upon you,” I said, “ with admiration and envy. You have been in his company about two hours and a half. You have never exchanged a word with him. But you have got him in spirits ”

“ No, I haven't,” she said with head-shaking, “ no, my dear man, I haven't. He's got himself in 'em. Nobody in this house is going to get the Baron. Don't you make any mistake. Now, I'll tell you something. He's in the next room playing bridge, isn't he ? Very well. Now I'll undertake to say that he could give you a chart showing where *she* is, where Pierpoint is, and where Hector is. Although he's seen nothing of 'em ! . . . And another thing. I'll bet you half-a-crown that before the Broderodes go the Baron will ask Pierpoint to come and shoot with him in Galicia. Do you take that ? ”

I said that I would rather not. The odd part of the tale is that the Baron did ask him.

She was a good old soul, though. I watched her with amazement go directly from me to the other end of the room and plump herself down beside Helena. I thought that the beauty was annoyed—and she might very well have been so, but she had very pretty manners. Miss Bacchus “buted in,” as Lady Mark would say, with the utmost gallantry, and (as I could see) brought Pierpoint smartly to heel in a few rounds. After a little more she beckoned Hector over with a toss of her head, and I saw the poor chap swallow his mortification and be all the better for it. Pierpoint got sick of it and took himself off. We saw no more of him. And then Miss Bacchus, her fairy godmothership accomplished, limped away on her own account. I was delighted to receive a friendly wink as she passed me. “Cooked *his* goose for him,” she said—in what she thought, no doubt, was a whisper.

Helena was being quite kind to Hector. Evidently she thought that she had misbehaved.

Now I come to the ball—but must have a new chapter for it.

## VIII EUPHEMIA

It was a yearly business, the Inveroran Ball. It always followed the Highland Gathering, and after it there was a servants' ball.<sup>3</sup> All these were great spectacles for the Baron, who prepared himself for them with German thoroughness, but also with a southern brightness which belongs only to his branch of the Teuton family. He read a book upon the clans, and got to know the tartans. He said to me, "They are like the Greeks, these Gaels—like Greeks in the rain. You have the clan Nestor, the clan Tydeus, the clan Peleus, the clan Atreus. But you have no Homer to sing of them. You have Ossian—who weeps and has a hump." He never got the argot quite right. "Yes, that is right," he chuckled "Ossian has a hump, and the reader wants an umbrella." He was very pleased with that, but I told him that the Highland Gathering would produce no umbrellas. He wanted to know about the Gathering. I said that it was very like the games in Scheria when Odysseus

scored off the Phæacians "So!" said the Baron. "But Odysseus, where is he?" We exchanged looks, and he shrugged his great shoulders "Once," he said, "I could have been he. Now I am what you see." It was the only time, during my acquaintance with him, that he ever admitted incapacity. He did it without any trace of bitterness. I don't think he felt any grudge against Providence. He would have been the first to admit that he had had his whack.

He was always very friendly with me, and seemed to find me provocative of jocularities; I don't know why, unless it was a reminiscence of Chevenix, who had been in my company when we first met. Chevenix had a way of impressing himself on the tourist. He had a very pronounced voice and his anecdotes were often intimate. "As your gold-tipt friend would say," was the Baron's signal for a laborious pleasantry. So it was that when it was arranged he should ride his pony down to the meeting, he asked me to ride with him.

We went down therefore together. They held the sports in a great field between Oranmouth and the town. It was called the Port Field and ran up to the edge of the moors in a fine amphitheatre of foothills. Ben Mor,

the great mountain of these parts, filled the distance with rock and cloud

"You English," said he, "are a strange race. I suppose you have not possessed the Highlands for more than two hundred, two hundred-fifty years, but already you have taught the Highlander to play at life. What is Sir Roderick but a white-bearded schoolboy? Is it not so?"

I said that Sir Roderick had been educated in England, but at bottom was quite un-English

"And his sons—" The Baron threw up his whip hand. "These fine young men—do they not play?"

I admitted that they did, but I added that they worked at it

"Yes, that is true. As your friend would say, they work at then play, and they play at their work. You can't tell one from the other."

"No," I agreed, "you can't. And that's why they work so well. There's *gusto* there." That set him nodding his head and frowning. He knew all about *gusto*

When we were pacing down the main street his eyes were all about. He noticed the little poky shops, he was tickled by the holystone patterns on the thresholds. He was pleased,



with the way private houses were interspersed with places of business. "There," he said, as we passed Rosemount, "is a pretty doll's house."

Rosemount is just that. A white house with a green slate roof; a neat little forecourt of green turf divided by a brick-on-edge path. An *auraucaria* on one side, an Irish yew on the other, a little white gate, red blinds, half-drawn, in all the windows. Charming with the gleam of sunlight shining on wet slates and splashing half the face. I told him that they called it Naboth's Vineyard at the Castle.

"So!" he said, and frowned over the name.

I explained that it was the only house in the whole town—the only house in the whole district—which did not belong to the Mallesons. It involved a long story—about a mistress of Sir Alastair Malleson, who had it given her and used it to affront the lady he subsequently married. Euphemia Grant, her name was, and it had belonged to her family ever since. The story was picturesque because of its excrescence. A blight upon our host's family was believed to depend upon it.

The Baron, greatly interested, pulled up his pony. "Tell me that story, if you please," he said, and fixed me with his eye.

The story very shortly was that Sir Alastair, who afterwards went out in the '45 and was shot at Derby from behind a hedge, had in his roaming days carried off Euphemia Grant and kept her at the Castle. There she reigned until he took a wife. Euphemia's people, who had been quite in a small way, instead of disowning her as you might have expected, took her back again, and set her up in Rosemount as a thorn in the side of Sir Alastair. She was known to the country as Madam Grant, and grew to be much respected for her implacability. She never married, but lived at Rosemount alone, when in the course of nature and the law the place was left to her. On her death-bed she cursed the Malleasons, declaring that there would never be a daughter to the house again while Rosemount stood. The odd thing was that there never had been. Sir Alastair's wife had two sons, but no daughter. His successor, Sir Archibald, had no children at all. Sir Ronald had sons and a daughter who died a child; and so it had gone on until here was Sir Roderick a widower with a regiment of sons and no daughter. One might laugh, in England, at such things; but they didn't laugh in Scotland. Sir Roderick believed in it as he did in the Old Testament. He had so far demeaned himself

as to write with his own hand to the owner of Rosemount. He would give anything you please for the place. But the Grants persisted, and could not be moved. An old Peter Grant held it now, but he was a Glasgow merchant and never occupied it. Nothing would induce him to sell it.

The Baron seemed to think this absurd. In his country, he said, they would make short work of Peter Grant. I asked him, How? lightly enough, and a very odd thing occurred. I saw him suddenly transported with rage. His eyes flashed fire, he was purplish red in the face. He shook his fist at the sky. "How?" he trumpeted. "How? Why, we squeeze him!" *Shkveeze him!*—I can't find signs to express it. But the concentration of shuddering rage which he put into it would pass your belief. I was astounded, and he saw I was, for he instantly laughed it off. "The damned fellow!" he said lightly, and began to talk of something else. I thought about this outburst for a long time. I am quite sure that he wanted to squeeze somebody, and equally clear that it wasn't Peter Grant.

He was all smiles and nods and becks at the Gathering, however. He was introduced to the local Marchioness, and stayed it out to the

last. I think he would have seen the fireworks with a little encouragement. Wynyard, as usual, tossed the pine-stem. I saw the Baron look wistful. He rode across the field to shake hands with him for that, and Wynyard thanked him.

The day ended with a sort of enthronization of Helena. She gave away the prizes, and did it charmingly. Without a hint to the purpose, by the intuition which all nice women have, she made the little speeches to the agonists which mean so much to them. Pierpoint got one. Wynyard, of course, two, and several fine blue-eyed Malleasons from the hills heard their names and exploits from her smiling lips. Sanders Malleeson the piper, when he got his, nearly burst with pride. His eye flashed, he throw his head up, then he bowed deeply to her, turned and struck up the Austrian Anthem. He marched away with it as if he were plunging into battle. Helena stood where she was perched up on the dais and watched him with clasped hands. Her eyes filled with tears at the reckless finery of the noise. She was no Austrian, but the good chap didn't know that—and, of course, she knew that he didn't. It was the swagger and gallantry as much as the compliment which moved her.

The Baron, sitting his pony, took off his hat and watched everything from beneath frowning brows I don't think he liked it. But he made a point of congratulating Pierpoint upon his triumphs

## IX THE BALL

ALL this by way of prelude to the ball which followed it. That was Helena's day. There was nobody to touch her. She had been quiet at the Gathering, sedate while all the young men capered and ran about, as it were, for her approving smiles. And they got them, no doubt; but they all had their share. She gave them back all that they gave her. She had had herself well in hand that day, and there was no difficulty in calling her thirty at least. But at the ball she looked like a girl. She wore cloth of silver, cut rather narrow, and made very plainly. Her neck was bare of ornament. She had a snake—a flexible snake—of silver in her hair; and I believe that was all. You didn't want jewels with eyes like hers. Hector got flowers for her, but she couldn't dance with flowers in her hand and soon discarded them. Her best flowers were in her cheeks. She was naturally a pale woman; but she was excited. That gave her an exquisite flush. There's a rose called Madame de Watteville

which comes nearest to it She certainly was a lovely creature that night—and she danced from the beginning to the very end of the end.

If it hadn't been for the Highland things—reels and strathspeys—my poor friend would have had no show, for Hector was no dancer You could see that by the look of him He held himself too stiffly, he was too serious; if you understand me, he was too much the gentleman for anything short of a *contredanse* or a minuet He would have tripped through that I don't doubt He was good at bowing, and used to take his hat off as if he was going into church when he met a lady. But I don't think anything would have tempted him to put his arm round a girl's waist—I mean, any waist, and as for banging her about in the ultra-modern way, he would sooner have gone to hell—indeed, would have been there while he was at that rude game. So he took the reels in her company, and I caught sight of them now and again—of him talking and of her looking down at her silver toes while she listened. She wasn't a great talker, but she was an awfully good listener. She was one of the women to whom men love to talk of themselves. She chattered nonsense to the boys like any girl, however—to Patrick and some of his pert

young friends As for Pierpoint—well, personally, I was touched by her excitement and complacency in his company

I had one dance with her myself, about midway through the first act—the before-supper act—during which things were going pretty well I mean that the Marchioness was there, with two of her girls, the Ladies Rosalind and Alice, and that Pierpoint, who was a great intimate at Dunmally, had done something of his duty by them. Lady Laibert was a little, thin, upright woman with very bright black eyes. She wore a tiara better than anyone I ever saw, as if she had every right to it—birth, purchase and air—which she certainly had She was noble, she was rich, and very smart. She was so smart that she had no need whatever for seeming to be So she never did Even when she wore her diamonds she didn't seem to know it. She had her fancies—one of them was to be bored at Inveroran, another was to be fond of Pierpoint. She must have known what he was, and she ought to have known that he would never do for one of her girls—but she risked that because she liked his good looks.

She didn't approve of Helena. I saw her eyes glitter bleakly as the pretty creature was



swished about by our high-coloured young friend. But she had no pique for *him*, she put it all down to Helena's score, and paid off part of it by striking up a great friendship with the Baron. They hobnobbed at considerable length in the anteroom, the conservatory, and elsewhere, and I should like to have overheard them, because the Baron could be the very best of company when he pleased. There was nothing local about him. He was the perfect cosmopolitan. I heard also afterwards—as I might have supposed—that he knew at least two of her boys, the one at Bucharest, the other in Constantinople. He had probably met Dunnally, the eldest, in several places, proper and improper.

But, on the whole, and with one unfortunate exception, there was no trouble until the Larberts were off our hands.

My own dance with Helena was a revelation to me, though I had understood that Austrians could dance. It was like floating a rose-leaf, it was like steering a foam-bubble. She was exquisitely yet impalpably there; the leading spirit, drawing you on, inexhaustible yet subservient. She inspired rather than led you. It was like the guidance of a spirit—the spirit of wingless flight. Wings would have been an

offence to such motion as she evoked. You would have felt their beat, it would have jaired. Her motion was rather that of a stream of soft strong wind, filling space, and drawing you after it into finer and cleaner climes. She didn't talk, nor did I, she seemed not to breathe—and we didn't stop until the music had ceased to be. I was intoxicated and unwilling to leave her. At the moment I felt like drawing her out into the air, and on and on, over the world—to possess altogether this divinely rare being.

But we behaved after the human fashion, and talked as rationally as might be. I hope that she didn't see what she might have done with me at the time; and yet I'm not at all sure that she did not. I remember that she pleaded with me like a child, as if excusing herself for naughtiness.

"You don't like me—you don't approve of me. No—I feel it. But I'm happy, and you ought not to mind that." This was heady talk.

"Did I know," she said, "that she hadn't danced for seven and a half years?"

I didn't—and didn't quite believe it.

She assured me it was true. "He—my husband—didn't like it, after——"

She didn't finish I said, "Then he won't like me"

Her eyes were wide. "Oh, yes He does like you He likes you very much He doesn't mind it here He likes nearly everybody here."

"So do you, Baroness, I hope." She sighed.

"Do you know," she said, "that I have been breathing ever since I came to England. Deep, deep breaths I have taken—to make up what I have lost"

That was touching, and left me speechless; but there was more to come She looked timidly at me There was a humid brightness in her eyes which should have warned me that she was going to be unreserved.

"You won't misunderstand me? I shall tell you what it is that I breathe. It is goodwill"

"Oh," I cried, "you will find oceans of that."

"I do," she said, "and it is so good for me. Do you know what I want more than everything in the world? It is to be liked by people."

"Dear Baroness," I said, "everybody in England will love you—" and there I was cut off by Pierpoint, come to claim his share in my promise.

I don't want to exaggerate—and it's not at all necessary. I believe I am right in stating

that, after supper, Master Pierpoint danced with her all the rest of the night. Of course I wasn't there all the time—I was dancing myself, as the business seemed, so to speak, in the air. I was dancing, and I was sitting out, and when I wasn't doing one of those things I was smoking cigarettes in the conservatory, which opens on to what they call the East drawing-room. It used to be Lady Mary's own room in her days. But whenever I was dancing, Pierpoint was whirling Helena about, or if he wasn't doing that he had her tucked away somewhere. That was what led to trouble—a momentary trouble. She was to have supped with the grandees—but that's just what she didn't do. Sir Roderick had intended to arm her in to that; but he couldn't find her, nor could anybody else. My belief is that she had supper in another part of the house altogether, but I don't know it for a fact. There was consequently some electricity about. It was rather pink for a bit. When no one was looking I abstracted her name-card, and with the connivance of Miss Bacchus, friendly old soul, bridged the gap. Lady Larbert glittered like a frost.

Later on, of course, everybody noticed the goings-on of the pair, and there was a good deal

of chattering among the resting couples. Sir Roderick was cross, and, as usual on such occasions, seemed to think it was done to hurt his feelings. He was always like that. He confided himself to Hector, I am sure. I saw him puffing his cheeks, and spreading out his chest, I caught, "Consideration for me, sir—the commonest civility—" and guessed the rest. But the Baron, as you may guess, never turned a hair. He watched her, as he watched everything, but he set his face harder than a rock, and was always ready with his joke or his elaborate bow. Did he feel that she was slipping through his fingers? Ah, I don't know.

I had thought her a tallish woman, and at Gironeggio in particular I thought that she looked every day of her age. In Pierpoint's arms she looked to me like a slip of a girl, so light that her little feet scarcely brushed the floor. The top of her head reached his collar, I suppose, her cheek lay against the hollow of his shoulder. The other was flushed and sleek. Her eyes looked heavy, and she seldom raised them as he steered or swirled her about. Being of the race she was, you may be sure that she could dance—I have told you what I thought of it; being of the sort he was, you

may be sure of him too. They made a brave show—and not a year's difference between them, to look at them. You couldn't expect a pretty woman not to like that kind of thing. She liked it awfully. She drank it as her old Baron used to drink cigar-smoke. And why on earth not? as Miss Bacchus said. *She* couldn't drink cigar-smoke—not anything else—at any rate, she never did drink anything but water. So why, asked Miss Bacchus, shouldn't she drink music and motion, and young men's homage, and young men's breath? That's what she asked me—and I couldn't answer her. "Hang it, man," said the old virgin, "she's not cattle. If *he* drinks, let her drink. That's what I say." She said more—but I respect my pen.

There would have been an explosion at the end—saved by the Baron from being rather serious. The Dunmally lot left after supper, and other guests from outside began to go away at about two in the morning. By three or half-past they were all away. But the house-party kept it up. The last dance was somewhere about five; and then we all had coffee and buns, and, as Colonel Vane would say, "By Gad, sir, we wanted it."

The cigarettes came round, the girls began to smoke; Helena would not. She was very still and rich with her escapade. I thought her breathing showed that she was trying to recover herself. The Baron lit a cigar, and looked at her over the horrible dancing flame of his match. I thought he wanted to catch her eye, but he didn't.

Pierpoint got up and pulled the curtains back. Then he opened the window wide and looked out, whistling softly to himself.

He turned round with his fine face sparkling with devilry. "I say, it's a ripping night. Stars all over the place—some of them like lamps. There'll be a gorgeous sunrise. Who'll come with me up the Ben?"

There was a hush. I saw the Baron pull himself together. Patrick said, "I shall cleave to my brother." Another youth said, "Right-o," and looked at his late partner. They were all for it.

Pierpoint was looking at Helena, Hector was looking at her, so was her husband. Presently it came to pass that everybody was either looking at her, or waiting for what she would do. It was a "test case," said Miss Bacchus, perspicuous as usual.

She sat there, breathing deeply, looking down

at her hand on the table. I know that she wanted to go. I know that if she had gone, there would have been a row. Hector would have lost his temper. Sir Roderick had lost his already.

The Baron said, "My friend, they want you to go. The air will do you good."

It was brave of him. He did it very well indeed. As for her, she looked at nobody but Sir Roderick—neither at her husband, nor Hector, nor at Pierpoint. To Sir Roderick she said, "It would be delightful, but I am too tired. As it is, I shall sleep for ever." Then she got up and smiled rather appealingly—still at Sir Roderick—"I shall say good-night while it is still dark." And then she went quietly away. It was as if she had said, "I know I have been a naughty girl, but you see how good I am trying to be now."

The Baron said, "So!" and resumed his cigar. The young ones fidgeted about to see what Pierpoint meant to do. Wynyard went off to bed, and so did I, gladly. I believe that the rest of them did the deed. Pierpoint in the sulks went up exactly as he was—in dancing-pumps. He ought to have limped for the rest of his leave, but he didn't.



## X SEQUELÆ

HECTOR was very unhappy, it was evident, and I don't wonder. To be cut out by your younger brother is not jolly; and when he is so resplendently the better man in form and favour, you have the desperate feeling of the foregone conclusion to add to your other troubles. It doesn't make things any better to remind a man who is getting the worst of a deal that he doesn't deserve anything better. Perhaps they *were* a pair of rascals—though I don't admit it; but even if they were, Hector was a gentleman. A gentleman will fall in love with another man's wife if he—well, if he does. He can't help his feelings—or his tentacles, if you like. It's when he *makes* love to such a lady that the world calls him names, and—if he is unsuccessful—opprobrious names. Hector would have been very ready to meet the world on its own ground. He abounded in theory and loved an argument; but in this case I am pretty sure that he had done no love-making—

unless you call his talks about the rights of beauty love-making. It's a fine point that. Now, as for Mr Pierpoint, he was a pirate—a freebooter, as you shall hear

A day or two after the ball—on the day, in fact, appointed for the von Broderodes' departure, Miss Bacchus sought me out with an air of mystery. She came into the library where I was alone and peacefully at work, and required me to walk with her. "I shall be on the terrace," she said, and left me to my conclusions

When we were well away, on the river walk, she said, "You are Hector's friend and will do what you think proper. I've had it out with her—no, that's wrong, she had it out with me. She did it rather prettily. She came and sat by me in the morning-room, and after a bit put her hand on mine, and spoke with her head on one side, as if she was matching skeins. *You know*" I did. "Presently she said, 'Miss Bacchus, I should like you to talk to me a little. I thought that you looked kind—I thought so directly I saw you.' I told her that I was the kindest old thing on two legs, with a bark, but no bite, for good people. That rather caught her. She said, 'I hope I am good.

I ought to be I want to be ' And then she began and told me all about it. She's a good girl, you know."

"Miss Bacchus," I said, "before *you* begin, let me beg of you no secrets of the bower."

"Gracious," said she. ' Don't you be afraid. You won't get any secrets out of me—because there aren't any—or, if there are, I don't know 'em But I don't believe it. You know Pierpoint every bit as well as I do——"

"No," I said, "I don't believe I do He's no friend of mine—and couldn't be, since I'm Hector's friend As a matter of fact, this time he's hardly exchanged a word with me."

"I think he's a rogue," said Miss Bacchus ; "but she doesn't She admits that he's made a great impression on her. She says that what makes it difficult is that her husband seems to like him. Now I don't understand that "

"I do," I said. "He hates him like poison, really, but he despises him. He knows that he could deal with the likes of Pierpoint. But he has a respect for Hector, who he thinks has done him a really bad turn. He hates Hector fundamentally—Pierpoint just on the

surface. Pierpoint's a flea to him, Hector's a disease "

" Well," said Miss Bacchus, " you're taking me out of my depth I don't know anything of psychology—never did. All I know is that Pierpoint kissed her the night of the ball."

" Well," I said, " I should think so."

" Just what I said to her," said Miss Bacchus " ' I'll warrant him,' I said But she was very penitent "

" I like her for that," I said. " She's got a gentle heart."

" Amor a cor gentile ratto s'apprende," said Miss Bacchus with aptness and elegance. " I made little of it. ' Pooh ! ' I said, ' what's a kiss in a conservatory ? ' Then she was really rather funny, poor dear——"

" No secrets of the bower," I implored her, but she was inexorable with a good tale in her head.

" Helena said, ' No, I suppose not—but *one* was in the library.' I did my best, but she felt me shaking—and looked so unhappy that I gave her a kiss myself."

" That was kind of you," I said.

" Well," said Miss Bacchus, " damn it all, you know."

I thought myself that the story was a good one, but that two kisses admitted was rather a serious matter—from all points of view. It almost established a habit, it certainly established a precedent. Miss Bacchus took a more robust view.

“She’s a very pretty woman,” said she, “he’d been dancing with her all the evening—and there you are. I don’t think there’s much in it. But you must decide for yourself what you are going to say to Hector.”

“Oh, Hector!” I said at once. “Poor chap, I shall say nothing at all, unless he speaks to me. Least said soonest mended. I need not assure you that I shall respect her confidence, since you have handed it on to me. I don’t think you ought to have done it, to be candid with you. It shall go no further—I promise you that.”

“Well, I should think not,” said she. “I had my reasons for telling you—and I thought you were to be trusted.”

“Your exquisite reason—” I demanded, and she told me.

“Von Broderode has asked Pierpoint out to his place in the winter—for shooting or hunting. He’s going. Now Helena don’t want him to come—or tells me so. But he’s

going, I believe. Can't you get Hector to go too? That's what I want you to do "

I was startled. "My dear friend, how on earth am I to ask Hector to go and shoot with another man? You can hardly be serious "

"I assure you that I'm not a fool," she said. "Helena herself is going to ask Hector. She thinks—she's afraid—he will refuse to come "

"Well," I said, "after the way she has treated him——"

"I know," said Miss Bacchus "That's what she feels, too. Now it's up to you to get him round. Don't frighten him, you know. Just wake him up."

I shook my head. "I *should* frighten him. No, no. That won't do. She must ask him herself "

"I tell you she means to," said Miss Bacchus

I stopped our walk and spoke my mind. I said, "Look here, Miss Bacchus, this is pretty bad, you know. She's at least four years older than Pierpoint; and if he's a rogue, to say the least of it, she ought to know better. Hector's is another affair alto-

gether You know what he is You know that he would never do her any harm Well, now she ought to have met him more than half-way If you ask me, I think that he'll be well out of it all He's been wretched enough here—and it's her fault. No, no I am for letting him get over it "

Miss Bacchus had been preparing herself for me while I was holding forth I saw it in her fishy old eye It was a cold, greenish, calculating eye—as flat as a snake's.

She said, " My fine man, your rhetoric has carried your wits away. That woman is a child at heart. She was married out of a convent to that old rake God knows what he's done with her—and God only knows. But I know, and so do you, that he's kept her to himself. I don't suppose she has talked to a man for ten minutes alone since she's been married. What have years got to do with it ? They may make a fool of her, if you like—that's all the difference they'll make She'll go to the deuce, and the likes of you will say she ought to have known better. How on earth could she know ? Don't talk such nonsense. You ought to know Hector better than I do. He's your friend, not

mine. But I'm as sure as I stand here that Hector would rather be in the fire than let her slip into trouble. And there's another thing. So far as I can understand, it is he who has brought her up to the edge of trouble. Very well, then, the least he can do is to pull her back again."

I had to confess that she was right.

The crisis was reached at luncheon. The von Bioderodes were leaving by the four o'clock train. They were going on to the Marquis's for a week on their way to London. That had been understood. What was not understood by the Baron was that Pierpoint was going to the Marquis's too.

During lunch von Bioderode made a kind of speech to Sir Roderick. It became a kind of speech. "I am glad to have seen your beautiful country under your care," he said. "I believe that I have seen the most beautiful part of it. Perhaps that is not fair to Scotland, but it is very good for me. I assure you that I leave you painfully." Sir Roderick crowed like a moor cock.

"My dear Baron, you must pay us another visit. Now that you have found us out, hey?"

The Baron twinkled and shone. "Yes, I



have found you out " He was looking full at Pierpoint as he said it—he used a rich full voice, with mockery in it—at least, it sounded so to me "I know what to expect of you. The welcome Highlander, as you say " Patrick kicked me under the table. "But before that happens, you are coming to try your luck in Galicia—ha ? " This, of course, to Pierpoint, who said, "Thanks, yes. I should love it "

"That is good for all of us," said the Baron, and looked all round the table. Then it was that Helena in clear tones to be heard by everybody spoke to Hector.

"I hope very much that you will come with your brother," she said. "You will be pleased with Galicia. I wish you to like it so much " She spoke studiedly, but with great courage. She was pale, but had very bright eyes

I never saw the Baron put out before. He was angry this time. His nostrils opened wide As for his eyes, they blazed. He said nothing at all, but looked straight at the man he believed his enemy. I was right and Miss Bacchus was wrong. It was Hector he feared.

He got over it in a moment, but he didn't

back up his wife's move Hector flushed deeply, and murmured that he should be most happy I gathered from the way he said it that he didn't mean to go—and I don't wonder. But she might make him—she probably would I felt sure that she would try.

After lunch is always a desultory sort of time. One loafs about and wants tea But I saw that Helena got what she wanted—a *tête-à-tête* with Hector Pierpoint had disappeared They went off together over the lawn, and I had to imagine the rest I am sure she meant to be kind to him.

And then they went. Pierpoint was not with them But he had left Inveroran already in his own trap. They seemed to think he would go directly to Dublin from Dunmally. His leave was nearly up

That was the night of the servants' ball. I had two dances with Ethel Cook, the handsome housemaid She was easily the queen of that party, none of our girls came near her, though Elspeth Muir was an uncommonly pretty girl.

Ethel Cook was dressed in grey, and had a red rose in her hair. She talked quite well,

but was rather reserved I said something about the day's departures, that it was a pity Mr. Pierpoint wasn't there. She said, with a dry voice, that he was better employed.

## XI THE FIRMNESS OF HECTOR

SHORTLY after these events I went South and got immersed in my departmental work and the mild relaxations of a London before Christmas. I had had no confidences from Hector. He did not choose to discuss his affairs, and I couldn't question him about them. I can't say that he was even normally cheerful. He was very gentle; but he was always that. On the other hand, he wasn't in the deeps of misery. He held his head up and did what his station up there required of him. Just as I was leaving he said that he should probably see me in London during the winter. I said that I should expect to put him up—he always came to me when he was in London—and he made no immediate answer. Then he said, "It's all in the air at present. We'll write about it." That was how it had to be left.

I went to London, I got busy, I saw nobody connected with the Malleasons, I forgot the von Broderode comedy and all to do with it—

until one afternoon in November when I went into my club. There in the hall was old Vance in the act to depart with cigar in mouth and match in hand.

We hardly know each other. I nodded and passed on to the hat-peg department. But he turned and called after me. At the same moment the match burned his finger.

"D—— the match," he said as I returned. "Oh, I say, I wish you'd clear something up for me. It's about——" and here he began to whisper—"it's about young Malleson—you know the chap I mean. Chap in the 16th——"

"Pierpoint?" I was all there in a second. "What's he been up to?"

The Colonel looked at me from under his glasses with the intolerably supercilious effect that trick always has—as it to say, What kind of a silly ass might you be? Then he seemed to give me up.

"Made sure you'd know. Why, he's sent in his papers. That's what he's done."

I thought immediately of all that this might mean. "Are you sure about that?" was what I said—to gain time. It annoyed the Colonel.

"It's in the *Gazette*—if that's what you mean. Now, what's he been up to?" That

was exactly my question to him of a minute ago

I said, "I haven't heard from Hector ever since I left Inveroran. But I expect that I shall now. Pierpoint doesn't love me very much—and I've never given him any reason why he should"

"Oh," said the Colonel, "I think he's a rip. But they'll stand a lot of that kind of thing. But I'm sorry for the old chief—he's a fine old cock. This will make him moult a tail-feather or two—I'll be shot if it don't." I am sorry to add that he chuckled rather snugly over the thought. "Devilish proud old boy is the old chief. And Pierpoint the apple of his eye." With that comfortable reflection the Colonel grasped his umbrella firmly in the midst and stalked off with a curt salutation.

I was dead certain that this had something to do with Helena von Broderode, though why I thought so, or what it had to do with her, I couldn't tell you. And it was one of those sort of things you can't ask about for fear of the worst. Hector was in my thoughts—I was awfully fond of Hector in my own way—I would have given anything to see him. But there was nothing to be done:

I must wait for him, quite sure that sooner or later he would see me about it. I don't mind owning that for a week or more I slunk about town as if I were under a cloud. I saw Chevenix in Pall Mall one afternoon, and fairly bolted up into St James's Square. I was careful where I dined, lest I should happen upon Miss Bacchus. She would have raked me fore and aft, I knew. I was virtually in hiding—no private views, no first nights. It was a bad time.

Finally, I had a line from Hector—but that wasn't till mid-December. He wrote very shortly: "I must be in London for a few days before the feast. I hope very much to see you. You can put me up for a night or two, I'm sure. Don't ask anybody to meet me—H M M"

He came. He looked very serious; but he was a proud chap and very sensitive, so I let him have his head. I was dining out the night he came, and returned at about eleven or half-past. He was sitting before the fire with a book and his pipe.

He began to talk with an effort—pure instinct on his part to avoid the unavoidable. As nearly as may be he said this.

"You know that Pierpoint has chucked the Army, of course."

I said that I had been told so Had they known that he intended it ?

"None of us knew it," he said, "until he wrote to my father. Personally, I wasn't surprised You see, I know him"

"What did your father say ?" I asked

"He made out—or tried to make out—that he was very glad of it He admitted that Pierpoint was his favourite He said it would be a comfort to him to have him at home—and all that kind of thing It was as plain as a pikestaff that he was awfully upset. He couldn't make it out at all"

"But," I said, "he didn't suspect anything awkward—any trouble ?"

"No, I don't think he did He thinks very highly of everything belonging to him. It would pretty well kill him I hadn't the heart to try to prepare him—for anything, you know I suppose I shall have to do something"

I said, "My dear fellow, I can see that you have faced it. Don't talk to me about it if you'd rather not. *Has* he got into a mess, do you think ?"



"I don't think he has," he said. "But I think he intends to."

I was now pretty sure, not only that he did, but in what direction his mess was to lie; but I said nothing at the moment. I waited for Hector, who sat up before me like a bonze, burrowing deeply into his own recesses.

He broke out in such an unexpected place that I gasped.

"My father doesn't like her, you know," he said. "That's the worst of it" This was absurd Sir Roderick liked everybody who liked him; and that Helena liked him was as plain as my cook

I cast my hesitations to the four winds. "My dear Hector," I said, "you don't contemplate—you can't contemplate a catastrophe without stirring from your place!"

He said with perfect gravity, "I don't see what I can do"

He was difficult to deal with in this impassive mood He seemed to be in another world, breathing an alien air, subject to an alien code of morals. But I was annoyed.

"Do, my dear chap!" I cried. "You can do all sorts of things—and nobody else can do anything. Do you sit there and tell

me that you intend to let Pierpoint go out to Galicia alone ? ”

He didn't move a muscle. “I am not going with him, if that is what you mean.”

He frightened me I thought he was out of his mind And after that I was doubly annoyed, because he was so infernally sane about it.

“Very well,” I said. “It's your affair, and not mine You have to reflect upon your responsibilities, how far you may have been concerned in bringing this about I won't say any more And you will do me the justice to remark that I have said nothing throughout unless you have invited me ”

He softened at once, and became more human. “I know, I know You have been very good about it You were in it from the beginning, and have had every reason to take an interest. And you are the best friend I have I know that very well But this is how I feel about it. I hope you'll understand me You and I aren't in agreement—as to the rudiments, I mean. We differ in first principles. Therefore, if I have made up my mind upon my course of conduct, I've made it up, you see, on premises which you dispute. So there's no common ground

for us. I say this so that you may leave off being offended with me I *must* do what I think right That, at least, you will agree to ”

Naturally, I agreed to it, and most certainly I didn't want to dig up the whole thing from the foundations and discuss the ground plan. But I thought I might as well find out exactly what he thought was going to happen—and asked him plainly, Did he suppose Pierpoint and she had come to an understanding ?

He said that he did suppose so, though he *knew* nothing “I haven't spoken to Pierpoint—indeed, I haven't seen him since he left us to go to Dunmally ”

“Then you infer it from his chucking the service ? ”

He nodded to that

“Then,” I said, “you must also suppose that he and she are going to do a bolt ”

He said, “I do suppose so ”

I must say he took it coolly for a lover. But you never know with these emotional men what they are doing beneath their externals. I made one more effort.

“It is easy to see,” I said, “that if you were with him you could prevent that ”

He still stared at the fire.

"Why should I prevent it?" he said.  
"She wouldn't come with me"

"I hope you wouldn't ask her to," I said;  
"in fact, I am sure you wouldn't"

He looked quickly at me "Oh, but you are wrong I should decidedly ask her if I thought that she cared about me. But she doesn't—not in that sort of way"

"That being so, my dear Hector," I said, "she had much better stay where she is That seems to me self-evident. I don't see how the most extreme idealist could wish a woman to be carried off by a man four years younger than she is, still less when that man is your brother Pierpoint, of whose conduct and conversation you are a better judge than I am"

"Anything," said Hector, "is better for her than remaining with that dying Priapus, who only lives so long as she has any vitality in her"

There was a dreadful certainty about him which baffled my speech I was prepared for a high line, but not for such lengths of fanaticism

It was difficult to argue with a man like that; and of course he knew more about Helena than I did. To anybody but Hector

I should have said that she had plenty of ways of protecting herself. She wasn't a girl, she wasn't a fool. She might refuse to live with him—anything in the world would be better than what he contemplated for her with such gloomy complacency, if I may say that.

But I didn't feel that I could go on with that sort of wrangle. It always made me angry to be stone-walled. So I said—what I was far from believing—that it was by no means certain that she would be persuaded by Pierpoint. She was a Catholic, she was a mother, she seemed a God-fearing, or at least a world-fearing, woman. I said that she struck me as a cold nature. Heaven help me! Suppose he had known what Miss Bacchus knew, for instance.

Perhaps he did, for he stopped me, saying, "You are wrong. She has not a cold temperament. She is enthusiastic, and quickly moved." Then he said quickly and fervently, with a break now and then in his voice, "I love her with all my soul. She is my ideal of what a woman should be—ardent, devoted, yielding, gentle, and kind. She could not do an unkind thing; but if she were deeply moved she could do any daring thing. I

would gladly have braved the hard eyes of the world, the shooting tongues, the cruel, pointing fingers—to serve her. But I have never spoken to her of my hope. Now—if she is so blessed as to have a heart full of love—if she is so blessed—let her go with him in God's name. It will give me a right to stand by her. She will be my sister, and shall have a brother's love from me. If no one else will save her from her captor I will."

"Save her, by all means," I said. "But you will have to save her from Pierpoint by and by."

"I know that," he said. "Pierpoint will want to be off."

"You are allowing her to get into an intolerable position," I told him. "You don't know what you are doing."

He said, "She is in an intolerable position already. There is no other way of saving her."

I said, "Hector, I urge you to go out there—either at once or when he goes."

He showed me cavernous eyes—cavernous eyes with despair in the depths of them. "I can't go—I can't go," he said. "I love her too much. It would tear my heart to pieces."

We talked on, I suppose, half the night ; but it was only a going over the ground again. Once more at least I brought him up to the point where it seemed a matter of that or nothing. Once more, when fairly up against it, he broke back and said that he couldn't. No man wants to see the woman he loves elope with another man, no man wants to lay himself open to such a taunt as Pierpoint baulked might have against him. Pierpoint might say, You profess to love this woman ; you know that she loves me. Yet you leave her with a man abhorrent, whom you have taught her to abhor, you are content to do that sooner than see her happy with anybody but yourself. Pierpoint might say that. Hector may have felt its force. My belief is that Hector had taught himself to want her to elope. He had made a monster out of the Baron. As for himself, I don't think he thought of himself. That's where he was so inhuman.

The rest of his conversation with me during the few days he was at my place may be summarized thus : he had no conversation with me. It is literally true. The morning after that which I have recorded he was very-silent. When I came back in the evening

he had recovered somewhat. We dined at the club, looked in at a theatre, chatted desultorily, and went to bed. Next day he was out to dinner somewhere. The day after that he went away, having received a telegram. I believe it was from Pierpoint, but he didn't tell me. He went away without a word to me about Helena. I couldn't say anything, or do anything. He didn't mean me to.

Having done my little best and been snubbed for it, I washed my hands of poor old Hector's family affairs, and now felt at liberty to go out into the world. The world, as I might have known, if I hadn't been so self-conscious, persisted in rolling on. Pretty women still went to the tea-shop of the moment with very young or very old gentlemen in attendance; Parliament still talked about Home Rule; the *National Review* still asked us to take its word for it that Ministers were common pickpockets, and still we didn't. Christmas came round, and we all went away. There were two days' skating and thirty days of rain. At the end of January, just as I was saying to myself that in two months more I might get down into Provence, with the



wind, I met Miss Bacchus at a party and took her down to dinner. On the stairs she said to me, "I suppose you know all about it."

I did, then. "Do you mean the best or the worst?" I said.

"Oh," said she, "it all depends. I believe Hector thinks it's capital."

"Then," I said, "he's done it."

"Who has done what?" she said, evidently not sure whether I knew anything or not.

"Why, Apollo," I said. She was satisfied. "I'll tell you presently," she concluded—and then we were at table.

"All I know is," she said, "that Pierpoint has written to his father. I know that from Elspeth Muir, who was there when the letter came. She said the old man nearly had a fit."

I stopped her there. "Look here," I said, "do let us have one thing clear first. What did Pierpoint say in his letter?"

She didn't know. Of course she didn't.

"Very well," I said. "Then what did the chief say in his fit?"

Again she didn't know. It was all a wild surmise. "The Marks were in the house. Hector was sent for. He's up there now. They sent all the outsiders away. I saw Lord Mark on Sunday."

“And what did Lord Mark tell you?” I wanted to know.

“Well, he said that Pierpoint was going to take her away”

I told her that I didn’t believe it; but in my heart’s core, knowing Pierpoint, I shivered. “At any rate,” I added, “if Pierpoint *was* going to run away with her, he’d hardly tell his father about it—would he?”

She allowed that, but she thought that, without letting the cat out of the bag himself, he might have left the key about

“Does Hector know—or suspect?” I asked

“They all know what there is to know,” he replied “It’s a bad look-out for fair Helena.”

I said, “She ought to have known better Upon my word—a woman of her age.”

“If she had been *his* age,” said Miss Bacchus very acutely, “she *would* have known better.”

## XII HELENA FLIES

IN that parlous condition I had to leave my friend's affairs—his heart seething and bobbing, as it were, like a pippin in a brew. Although I cursed Hector for a besotted idealist who didn't think people went to the devil so long as they went *his* way there—I didn't feel that I could write and tell him so, satisfaction as that would have been to myself. I was so angry with him that I didn't remember how often I had been angry with him before—nor even what superhuman luck he had had more than once before. There things had to remain, and there I left them, subject to occasional stabs of consciousness when I realized that, at the hour it was, Helena might be a runaway wife, already rung the bad exchange she had made.

Then—some time in March, as I suppose—Wynyard came to see me, appearing as if shot out of the blue sky—Wynyard the lean and grim and red, Wynyard the parody of Pierpoint, astonishing by his likeness and

unlikeness to his twin. Wynyard himself stalked into my rooms when I was at breakfast, nodded a curt good morning and asked, or looked, for food.

He had it, and consumed it in silence, or nearly in silence. All his comment was upon its excellence "Awfully good bacon There's a thing you simply don't *see* abroad. As for their coffee—muck." So he had been abroad! That was rare for him. But I knew him, and left him alone.

When he had really done, and had lighted his pipe, he gave me a shock. "Well," he said, "I thought you'd be interested to know . . . I've cooked his goose for him"

"Whose goose, my dear chap?" I asked, though I guessed.

He said, "My beautiful brother's He was going off with her. On the very brink"

"Well?"

"Well," said Wynyard, with narrowed eyes, "He won't."

"Oh," I said. "Are you sure?"

"I'm as sure," he said, "as that I've had breakfast."

I jumped to the thought of fair Helena. "And what does she think about it? How did she cool off? Because you have to blow

pretty hot to get such a tone in the air as the elopement tone . . . ”

“I can’t tell you,” Wynyard said, “what she thinks about it, because I don’t know. But I do know that Pierpoint is in Paris, while she, I believe, is in Bucharest, or some such place, with a Princess Glinka, a fat woman who wants washing ”

There was really nothing to say If you were to see a miracle there would be nothing to say. That is the test of a miracle

What I *did* say shows how little there was to say It was feeble, but it served

“How do you know,” I said, “that she wants washing ? ”

“Because I’ve seen her,” he replied “She was about—very much about. A great friend of Helena’s, and a good sort A fat Roumanian who lives about, mostly smoking. I had a talk with her. I told her she must stop it I said it was out of the question. She lifted her fat hands and made tragic eyes—at the ceiling, not at me When she said, ‘It is never out of the question for women to fall in love,’ I said, ‘It is in this case.’ And I made her see it ”

“Good Lord ! ” That was all there was to say. Then I asked him how Pierpoint took it.

“ Oh, Pierpoint didn't like it at all I rather shook Pierpoint But there was nothing to say He's in Paris. I daresay he'll go after her again after a bit But Glinka will let me know ”

“ Why did Glinka, as you call her, propose to allow Helena to go at all ? ” That was my next

Wynyard told me, “ Because Helena would have gone without leave if she hadn't got it She was mad to go She'd have gone with Pierpoint sooner than not go.”

So she had gone, then ? Wynyard said, of course she had gone With Glinka, and for the moment to Bucharest She had made up her mind, he said, to go before she left Inveroran last year. I wondered.

“ Do you mean to say that she—— ? ”

“ No,” he said “ I don't. She didn't tell me. But I knew it ”

This cold-eyed, hot-faced child of nature saw more than one gave him credit for. But he was always a shrouded creature. He had the gift of silence

“ Did you say anything at all to Helena ? Did you talk to her ? ”

He stared. “ Of course I talked to her. She asked me to come and see her—at

Bucharest. She took me to the convent to see her daughter. A nice child."

"And has she run away with Hermione too?"

"No. Hermione stays where she is. She's all right there."

I asked him, "How did she take Pierpoint's defection, Wynyard? And what on earth could he have said to her?"

Wynyard shrugged.

"God knows what he said. That wasn't my business. As for her, she never mentioned his name once. He might not have existed."

I understood that. She was a proud woman, and would sooner have died. But would she ever forgive him?

I turned to other points

"What will the Baron do? Has she told him, do you know?"

"She wrote to the Baron before she left."

"What will he do?"

Wynyard considered. "I think he'll get her back. The Baron's a man, or the remains of one. Personally, I like him."

"So do I," I said. Then I asked more about Pierpoint. He said that he didn't expect Pierpoint home for a bit. Pierpoint had thrown up his job, and as he had done it for

nothing it was unlikely he would come home to explain it away. His belief was that Pierpoint would go after Helena.

"And if he does?" I asked. My own belief was that if he did, she would know how to deal with him, but Wynyard apparently thought it possible that she would not

"If he does," said Wynyard, "I suppose that I shall go after Pierpoint"

"There'll be bloodshed," I told him.

"No, there won't," said Wynyard

He went North that night, to console his father. I took the trouble to spread the good news about London. I told Miss Bacchus, who sniffed, I told Lord Mark, who snorted "Wynyard's in love with her himself. They all are. The chief's in love with her So are you I call it rot."

I said, "I admit it. She's divinely pretty, and as soft as a bird's breast."

"Bah," said Lord Mark. "Give me a leathery woman." Somebody had.

The erring pair—I mean, of course, the Glinka and the fair runaway—went first to Castellammare, thence to Sicily, then to Corfù, from each of which sanctuaries in turn they were routed by German hordes whom Helena,



poor girl, either knew or thought she knew, or suspected of knowledge I can well imagine that the woods may have been full of eyes, that the Baron, so to speak,

*Formosum resonare docuit Amaryllida silvas*

—if I may make Virgil limp after me. He was not a man to be trifled with, nor could I judge him a man to let trifles of delicacy stand in his way.

Whether he pursued or not, they at any rate fled, believing in pursuit. And the Glinka was not made for a beast of chase. Although she was timorous, she was fat and loved her ease. She must have been very cross, and I can imagine that there may have been times when Helena almost regretted her servitude to her Baron's whim. I don't know the details of their flight, or by what stages they reached Tripolitza in Arcadia. They were there by the middle of June; and then they moved on to Sparta, or rather to Mistra, which is a romantic shell of a mediæval fortress-town upon the slopes of Taygetus. They were found there by Hector, who went out to visit them in October, and came back to London full of content with what he had seen and been told.

He said that they were installed in a convent,

which was shared also by the priest and his family. A very domestic couple, he reported them—the Princess, black-browed, heavy, dusty, a smoker of cigarettes and eater of oranges, very fond of Helena, petting her more than she scolded, though she did that too. She had a tragic air, a deep bass voice, and was not beardless. Helena, he said, was softly beautiful and learning Greek from the priest, a mild-eyed, melancholy lotus-eater whose ways were soothing to her. Pierpoint—she had admitted the renegade!—had been with them in Athens, but Hector gave me to understand that Athens was made impossible for him—and that his hostesses left in a hurry. The Glinka, who hated Pierpoint, feared the Baron as much as cold water, or any water. It was she who insisted on bundling off, though she was the last person in the world to bundle. Not that the Baron had been there—no, but he had been heard of. He had certainly been in Greece, and had left spies behind him. They were persons, Hector said, whom Helena knew. They did not speak to her, they did not even seem to be aware of her, but they haunted her. She sent Pierpoint away—but to no purpose. It became a silent persecution and gave her a bad attack of nerves. She limbered

up her Glinka—or was limbered up herself—and moved by night, first to Patras, then to Tripolitza by carriage—heavy work for a sultry Roumanian princess who did not as a rule put on her clothes till four in the afternoon. But the peace and solitude of the mountain stronghold revived her wonderfully, and Hector believed that if the supply of French novels held out the Glinka would be content to remain through the winter. After that he didn't know what would happen

He was on his way North, when he told me all this—to see his father and reassure him about Pierpoint. He himself seemed quite at ease. His heart was fixed, he said. His lady was free, knew that she was loved, accepted his devotion, and relied upon it. He was to hold himself ready to go to her at a moment's warning. I never met a lover of his sort before—a vicarious lover, a kind of carpet Cyrano de Bergerac. His ideas of romantic enchantment were too bleak for me.

“You think she is happy?” I asked him, and he replied at once that he did.

“Of course,” he said, “she regrets the child. She has news of her from a friend whom she can trust. But, unfortunately—I rather gather this—she gets news about von

Broderode too. That's a great bore—but it can't be helped."

"She has heard nothing from the Baron directly?"

He shook his head "Not a word"

"She has written to him?"

"She wrote when she left him She hasn't written since."

"You have no idea what he is doing?"

"Not the least, beyond what I have told you. I feel sure that he is not sitting still."

So did I.

He changed the subject of his own accord by saying that it was beautiful to see her so happy. "You would hardly know her again," he told me. "There is a light upon her which you never saw there—a saliency in her motions which is enchanting And she has had a wonderful effect upon Pierpoint. He adores her, and gives no trouble at all He's never been serious before : he's serious now. I don't believe that he has a care in the world."

It was quite obvious to me now that my poor Hector had no notion of Wynyard's share in the game, and put down Pierpoint's withdrawal to innate virtue. Well, I let it go at that. But Helena's forgiveness of him could only be put down to one of two things : either

she was excessively enamoured, or he had lied enormously about his reasons

I said that it seemed to me a great pity that Pierpoint should have been there at all, considering what he had proposed. Hector held his head very high, said that to suspect her was to condemn myself, that Pierpoint had been there because he loved her—"just as I was myself," he added, with a fatuity only possible to an idealist, and a Hector Malleson. He was quite *sui generis* in that kind of saying. He added afterwards that Helena was taking her responsibilities very seriously.

I said, "That's an odd way of showing seriousness." But Hector said, not at all. "Pierpoint has no cares, because nothing is difficult for him. She has called out his latent ability. She has made him ambitious. I am prepared to think rather highly of him."

I said, "He's not been tried yet. You should wait till the Baron puts the screw on." Then I noticed that Hector was prepared to make a family matter of it.

"We shall be ready for him if he does anything offensive," said my remarkable friend. "At present I don't see what he *can* do."

I pointed out one thing immediately, which

was that the Baron, having made Athens too hot for Pierpoint, might make Sparta too cold for his wife—by practically keeping her there, alone with a bored Roumanian lady of unsociable habits. I didn't know it, but I was prophesying. Hector was wired for while he was at Inveroran—while I was there too. He showed me the telegram, which simply said—according to a code which they had arranged beforehand—"Leaguer"—and off he went.

After a fortnight we heard from him—or from *them*, rather. I had a letter from Hector, which said, "The Baron is at the hotel at Sparta. She was sketching in Mistra when he was carried up the street in a kind of swinging chair—with a guide to point him out the objects of interest. She, poor child, sat frozen in her place, not daring to look at him. He took his hat off, and was carried on. Since that time he has installed himself at Sparta, within easy distance of her. He has Teresa Visconti, his attendant, with him, a doctor, and a succession of friends. She cannot stop here, and the Princess will not. What to do I don't know at present. She has written to my father, with my full approval. If he speaks about it, I rely upon your friendship." That was all.

Well, she had indeed written to Sir Roderick. She had, it is simpler to say at once, cast herself into his bosom. That, whether a ruse or an artless rush for safety, was the way to do it. I never saw the old man so moved by anything. He called us together—those of us who were his familiars. We held a council of war. He said that a beautiful and persecuted lady had appealed to him for protection. She and her husband had both been his guests, and could claim equal rights from him. It was no part of his business (he meant *our* business) to judge between a husband and wife. We might have our prejudices, they might or might not be reasonable, or even honourable. The thing was done—the lady had left him. He, with no legal right to support him, not asserting any such right, chose to obtrude himself upon her, to beset her. The lady, not knowing where to turn, had written to him a noble, touching, affecting letter, he said—he had it in his hand, tried to read extracts from it, and broke down—which no man of honour or common charity could receive and not be affected by. He said that there was but one thing to do—namely, to offer her instant and unconditional asylum. Inveroran, himself, his sons, his friends were at her service. He had

not called us to advise him, he knew us too well to doubt what our advice would be; we, he believed, knew him too well to suppose him in need of it. Hector would escort her. He had telegraphed to Hector to that effect. He ended up by saying that he was a proud man that day. And he looked it.

We weren't a very big party that year. The chief's audience consisted of Lord Mark, Wynyard, Patrick, and myself. The first named was the only one who said anything. Wynyard squared his jaw, Patrick shuffled his feet about and had his cheeks buried in his hands. But Lord Mark said, that was all right—very right and proper; but what were we going to do about the neighbourhood? People would talk, he said, and they didn't like runaway wives in Scotland. The old chief glared at him and asked him what he meant. He wasn't at all dismayed. He said he meant exactly what he said. They didn't like wives who ran away. There were the Larberts at Dunmally, for instance. Well, they know every one. One of the sons was in the Ottoman Bank at Constantinople, for instance. Now, suppose old Broderode came across *him*? Well, the first thing that would happen would be that the Dunmally people would come over here with



old Broderode's story at their fingers' ends. The second thing might be that old Broderode would be asked to stay with them. We remembered what went on at the ball up here ! The Marchioness was all for the Baron, and didn't care a bit for Helena's goings on Well, what about that ? So said Lord Mark in his tone of querulous commonsense , and it was not much help that Sir Roderick fumed and glared at him Wynyard took him as well as it could be done, I believe. He said, " Very well Let them have him. He won't come here, and that's all she cares about " Mark said there'd be a beastly scandal—and Sir Roderick jumped down his throat A scandal at Inveroran—raised by the Larberts—in Malleson county ! Did Mark know what he was saying ? Mark, who did, perfectly well, subsided into sniffs and grunts, and the storm died down , but afterwards he told me what of course was in his mind Pierpoint was involved in this Pierpoint had done his best to elope with Helena The Baron knew all about that—trust him Well, then, if the Larberts got to know that, and then found Pierpoint lodged in the house—with Helena—well, said Mark, there'd be the deuce's own fuss, and he didn't mind telling me that Lady

Mark wouldn't stand it. She was an American. "They call her stodgy," he said, "and she may be stodgy—but she won't stand any hanky-panky with the Seventh Commandment; and my position here will be devilish awkward. I don't know what I shall do if that woman comes here. My wife'll go to America—that's certain. And I suppose she'll stop there, because she won't come here while the woman's in the house. And mark you this"—he slapped the palm of one hand with the finger of the other—"If she comes here, she comes for good. That's a certainty."

He glared at me through his monocle, pausing for the reply which he didn't get. "Very well," said he, "what happens then? Why, you practically divorce me and my wife. That's what you do. And that's what I call chucking stones into a pond. You make rings, you know. And it's *my* pond, I'll trouble you." There was a good deal in what he said, though it wasn't clearly expressed.

But Lord Mark was the only malcontent. As for the rest of us, it seemed that the chief was on our minds and consciences, and we in a conspiracy to make what was not appear as if it was. I believe that with Helena's letter he took Helena herself to his heart. He

talked of her as if she were daughter of the house. It was "When that child comes," or even "When that child comes back." Back! Now there never had been a daughter of the house. Not only had his wife given him no girl, but no Malleson chieftainess had had a daughter for several generations. It was odd, but so it was. The legend explained it, to the Malleson mind, the legend of Euphemia Grant and the Malleson curse—the Malleson malison, Pat used to call it. Euphemia had been a lady who loved too well. Since the day of her expulsion from Inveroran, it was said, there had never been a daughter to the house. So there was cause enough for Sir Roderick to take this willing lady to his bosom, or (since she had come there by the post) to keep her in it. In his own simple transparent way he was as much of an idealist as Hector. That which he desired to be, *was*. And so we all played up.

In the air—I don't know how to describe it, but was conscious of it for the three weeks I put in at Inveroran—there was a kind of suspense—a kind of vibratory feeling, as if the whole place was singing with preparation. It was exciting enough. Sandars felt it, I know, the careworn butler, who had begun as a boot-

boy when Sir Roderick had been put into his first kilt, and had climbed up to his present place. He was five years older than his master I came down one day before anybody, and found him in distressful circumstances Ethel Cook, that fine, tall housemaid, was before him, wiping her eyes with her apron. Sandars had his hand on her shoulder "I could not do it, my girl, I could not——" There he broke off, but I had got away

Another time I saw him crossing the hall with the kettle for tea, tiptoeing in his usual circumspect fashion And yet he seemed to be labouring like a ship in the trough of a heavy sea Then I saw him put the kettle down and cover his eyes with his hand He lifted his face towards the ceiling, and kept it so, covered still Then he shook his head slowly, resumed his burden and went on his way I knew him so well that it was an impulse hard to resist, to run after him and ask what was the matter. I did resist it, however, obeying that strange instinct of all of us in that house to put the thing away from us, and for the chief's sake pretend it wasn't there

I renewed acquaintance with Ethel Cook at the servants' ball; but she seemed to have

lead in her toes, and stopped after a couple of turns. We were, of course, pretty old friends. She had been six years at Inveroran. I reminded her that she had been keener on dancing last year, and she admitted it with a sigh. She said, "Yes, but that was a year ago. A deal has happened since."

I said, no troubles at home, I hoped. No, she said, they were all well at home. She hadn't been very well. I said—a change. But she seemed to think that impossible. "Oh, no, I couldn't go now——" and then she stopped, as if she had said too much. An electric condition of affairs—which gets on the nerves of a household.

### XIII ASYLUM

Nothing happened until the spring, however. When I left Inveroran in October Hector was expected back during the next month. He had escorted his two ladies to Paris, taking Vienna on the way, where Helena had paid a hidden visit to the child and pushed on. The dusky Princess longed for the rue de la Paix and wouldn't stop long. Besides, she was terrified of the Baron.

When they reached safety in Paris Hector thought it his duty to leave—and, in fact did leave, it being understood that Helena should come to Inveroran in May. He didn't mention Pierpoint to me when I saw him on his way home, but I have reason to believe that the amorist was in Paris too, and a good deal in Helena's company. He was certainly there in the spring when Hector went out to escort the lady northwards, because she arrived, like a captive Briseis, between the pair of them.

• I met them at Charing Cross one bright afternoon in early May, and was immediately

struck by her soft and rich allure. She looked eight-and-twenty, and amazingly pretty. She had more colour; her eyes were brighter; she was more vivacious. Love suited her. She was like the burnished dove of the poem, having a livelier iris. I thought Pierpoint improved by his moustache and beard. He looked more like his wholesome twin. As for Hector, there was a kind of Bless you, my children! air upon him which gave me a fit of chuckling whenever I looked upon his beaming paternal eyes. Nothing of the ousted pretendant about him. Bless you, no! You would have said that he had attained the utmost of his desire.

I was not alone to receive them. Miss Bacchus was there, by arrangement it seemed. "Yes, I'm an accomplice," she told me. "I don't know what you're all going to do with her when the Baron dies. It will be an unseemly scramble, I'm thinking—like the end of the Austrian Empire. Personally, I shall back the best man."

"Who's he?" I asked her. She said, "Well, the Baron will win—if he lives. That's a certainty."

I said that Inveroran was a long way off his beat. She nodded her head many times, and said so had Sparta been. "These foot-

in-the-grave people," she said, "live from point to point. You'll see." I did see; but at the moment I didn't believe her

It was the chief, she told me, who had urged her to be hospitable to Helena. In a long letter. "He don't disguise his feelings," she said, "and has no need to. They do him great credit. Imagine an old autocrat of his age working out the details of a lady's visit to London! He's up to the neck"

"He wants a daughter," I said

She said, "Hum!"

If Helena was pleased to see me—and I believe that she was—she was enormously relieved to see the old gentlewoman. It saved her from the odd look of being escorted by three men. I knew a girl once—a very popular girl—who was escorted home from a dance by forty men; but that was in Germany, where people are enthusiastic.

Helena clasped my hand warmly and said how nice it all was, but she fairly jumped at Miss Bacchus and hugged her to her heart. "Oh, you kind, good creature. You are a true friend! How could I ever know that the English were so kind?"

I asked her, Hadn't Inveroran taught her anything? She went on hugging Miss Bacchus



as she said, Everything ! Everything ! It certainly had taught her a thing or two, as they say.

I now had time to notice how triumphant Hector showed up. As I said, it was as if he had achieved the ambition of a lifetime. In fact, as Miss Bacchus observed to me afterwards, he was the perfect uncle, for not only must he fuss about the luggage and produce the chit for the Custom House out of his waistcoat pocket, but there sat visibly upon him that air of having done something, pulled something off which benevolent uncles always have. Pier-point seemed sheepish beside him—the self-conscious nephew—as if he had been found out in an enthusiasm by his school-fellows. I don't know how far he thought us all ignorant of his late fiasco. Of course he saw through Hector. Hector, good ass, thought he had been called back at the last minute by his nobler nature. Helena knew what he had told her, too. But what about me ? What about Miss Bacchus ? It was on our score that he poked his head, I think, and looked like a flagging dog.

Helena, who had brought no maid with her, stayed with Miss Bacchus, and the lot of us dined with her that night. The old virgin had a flat in Kensington—in and out of which,

so long as we were in London, Helena lived and moved. Poor girl, she never seemed at ease without the old friendly soul. She by no means had the Mallesons to dine every night. Hector saw her every day; but Pierpoint seemed very detached. He went to the races, and paid week-end visits. She wouldn't go anywhere in public with *him*—though she let me take her to the Academy, and Hector had her to himself at the Zoo. We had a box for *Tristan* at the Opera, and all went to that, but she was so much upset by the second act that she had to go out. Miss Bacchus went with her and left the three of us *plantés là*. Hector and I stayed it out. Pierpoint went off to the Empire. Helena was in an emotional state, poor dear, always hovering between tears of shame and tears of pure joy. She could rarely trust herself to speak of her reception by “the family,” as she called us—when she didn't lump us all together as “the English.” Mrs. Jack Chevenix came to call upon her, and brought with her a quiet, beautiful woman, a friend of hers, a Mrs. Senhouse. Helena was deeply gratified by that. She admired our countrywomen; she said that they were a great testimony to the voluntary system. On the same grounds she supported the army.

“ They stand of themselves, your women,” she said. “ They choose to do what we are forced to do. I think it beautiful to see their proud bent heads. They are like the Caryatides of the Erechtheum. Women in Germany are drudges And as for the army—it is a herd.” That was her view, and what has happened since, and is still happening, shows her acumen.

Then, towards the last week in May—with Miss Bacchus as ballast—we all went up to Inveroran We took the boat from Glasgow, ran down the Clyde in fog and rain, but got into beautiful weather as we neared the islands, and opened the bay upon as beautiful a morning as I remember to have seen. The air seemed shot with blue and gold. There was the sandy shore ahead of us, backed by mountain and cloud; the little white town; the fishing-smacks tossing in the sparkling water; there was the castle, with the flag streaming out in the breeze of the upper air. A perfect day.

She stood on the foredeck with her hand on Hector’s arm. A long motor veil, which she had twisted up in her hair, flagged out like a pennon. She had been up with the light, waiting for this. So simple, so innocent, so

true—it seemed impossible to think ill of her ! And I know that I didn't—and yet—and yet—I felt the intolerable pity of the thought that but for a very little she might have been as happy as she seemed. Everything was right but one thing. She was one of those women who simply must make a love-match. And that was just what she couldn't do. Well, it was no good thinking of it then. We were practically there the thing was to make the best of it.

I made out the old chief in his kilt, with his long walking-staff, from half a mile away. He was alone, it seemed—and, thank the Lord, there were no pipers in attendance and he had come down in the motor instead of the state carriage.

He was very shaky, very agitated, and so, of course, was she. He took off his bonnet when she came, and kissed her hand with great formality. She wanted to refuse it but didn't. He shook hands with Pierpoint, silently, not trusting himself with words, then with the rest of us. Hector went off with the servant to look after luggage, and told us not to wait for him. We all got into the motor—Pierpoint in front, the two ladies and the chief on the back seat. I was *vis-à-vis*. Miss Bacchus and I did the

chattering I saw that he had Helena's hand in his own. Passing Rosemount, the empty white house with its blank red blinds, I had a momentary shiver, remembering the Baron's fierce transports of a year and a half ago. But I felt all right directly we were in the approach road. We passed the lodges and were in our own domain. Inveroran has a huge park: a belt of forest trees runs all round, just inside the wall, and then comes open moorland country—mostly heather and silver birch thickets. The deer were moving about in the distant hollows, high up in the cloudless sky some big hawk was soaring like an aeroplane. It all seemed very primeval and stable; Europe very far away.

Sandars and his satellites awaited us on the *perron*. The chief got out after me, and handed down the ladies. Miss Bacchus bundled up the steps, but he led Helena by the hand. At the door he let her go, stood, looked at her, and then held out his arms. She faltered, then stumbling forward, fell into them, broke into sobs, and then fairly into a passion of crying. He soothed her as if she had been a child, and led her away. It was a most touching thing. The fine generous old chap! My eyes were wet over that. I wished Hector had been there.

Wynyard saw it, and turned away. Pierpoint had gone in before it happened. I saw that he and Wynyard exchanged no greeting, but don't think that anyone else noticed it.

## XIV DAUGHTER OF THE HOUSE

WITHIN a week, if you'll believe me, she might have been there from the cradle. That shows you that she had a genius for being snug. I had been sure of it. Within ten days she ran the whole house. You caught yourself saying, I wonder how the deuce they got on before she was here! In that bachelor house, I can tell you, the difference was extraordinary—extraordinarily pleasant too. We all revelled in her.

That is our excuse for being engaged, as I know we were, in a highly immoral conspiracy to make a thing which was not all right seem as if it was. We were harbouring a runaway wife and trying to ignore the fact that she was a married woman. She was "daughter of the house," if you please, in defiance of Euphemia Grant, and the curse of the Malleasons. We were engaged in buoying up a bladder of fiction, which might break into thin air at any moment, or by any exaggerated breath. But we were all at it, led by Wynyard, who had been so put off by it at first. Wynyard swiftly and finally

## 175 DAUGHTER OF THE HOUSE

fell in love with Helena. He betrayed himself at every point, after his own fashion. He became her shadow, and said less than ever. It seems a stupid way of making love, but she couldn't have enough love, you see, and she read the nature of the man Pat followed, when he came home. Thus she had the lot; and the chief was the worst of them.

Not that the chief made love to her, of course. He did what was far more effective when he let her understand from the first that his welfare and moral standing in his kingdom were involved in her. Every act, every look, every word (and with him word stood for thought) implied it. It was a subtle form of enchantment, for while she was absolute mistress of her own head, heart, and will, he let her see beyond dispute that, so far as his were concerned, he had handed them up to her discretion. And she wasn't the woman to ignore responsibility. She felt it intensely. It chastened and sobered her at every turn. I was amused to watch her playing stepmother to all these young men who adored her. Nothing could have been more effective. Pier-point was as harmless as a sucking dove.

It wasn't our fault. We couldn't help it. Not only was she so pretty and so sweet, but



she made us all so cosy. It began, I remember, by her taking over the flowers for the house. Sandars had always done them himself. She made a different thing of it. One became aware of flowers, and of her at the same time. The scents mingled, the associations interacted. As Pat said, you found out what "ripping things" flowers were, and how "ripping" she was, "in one act." She used to be down long before anybody else; and there was always something exciting for the breakfast table—and, always, a rose for the chief in a vase, by his plate. So it went on, one thing led to another. It was Miss Bacchus who put her in touch with Mrs. MacIntyre, the housekeeper, and with Rose, the cook. Then we found out that Helena herself was a good cook. Then that department fell to her. So it went on.

And they all liked her, and all accepted her upon the fictitious value. She was not Miss Malleeson, she was "the Baroness," but she was taken as the lady of the house. She wasn't treated as a visitor. There was no question of a visit. Everything suggested permanency. They asked her if the curtains in her room would do "till next year." I believe Sandars thought she had been born there, had married, gone away, lost her husband

and come back again. It is a fact that Wilson, the head gardener, said, "Don't your ladyship remember? We planted him on Mafeking Day?" She had blushed and laughed as she said, "Indeed, Wilson, I don't"; but she was enormously pleased, and Sir Roderick, I feel sure, would have liked to raise his wages. It was awfully foolish, awfully fond—but Lord! how happy they were! Those three, the chief, Hector, Helena herself—I believe that summer was for each of them a time of golden haze, never hoped for, never to be forgotten. I won't answer for the others Wynyard brooded upon his affair, and while professing secrecy, at any rate to himself, was transparently concerned with Helena. Pierpoint sulked, and appeared to shrink while you looked at him. That was obviously because Wynyard was there. But he stuck it out, though Helena had very little to say to him, and didn't seem to have him at all at heart. It was curious how he had completely lost his conquering air. He was like a spent salmon.

An odd thing occurred. We thought it odd at the time. Helena had brought no maid with her, and there was a lot of talk about getting one for her. We were having tea.

Pat slapped his leg and jumped up—"I've got it. Promote Ethel. She's always been a trump. She's just the sort" Pierpoint was handing tea-cake or muffins. He looked very black "Rot!" he said. "Wouldn't do at all." He was as red as a peony, and hated it.

Helena looked from one to another as if she wondered (a) why Pat had proposed the girl, (b) why Pierpoint objected. The chief, who was rather slow at catching what we talked about, said, "Of course. Of course Universally respected. Nobody could do so well," and promised that Helena should see her.

Pierpoint, however, was very much put out. He sulked for the rest of the day. I had my own idea about it—which simply was that he had tried at one time or another to make a fool of the girl, and didn't care to have two of his failures brought together. I think Miss Bacchus had ideas too—but I kept away from her. It was settled, however, by Ethel's definitely refusing. She was perfectly respectful, I heard, but perfectly definite. She couldn't—and she wouldn't. Sir Roderick was very much offended, and, I believe, talked to her of "loyalty." She wouldn't do it, though. Pierpoint recovered; but shortly afterwards he went away—yachting, I understood, in Norway.

He seemed to me to have put Helena out of his head; or he might have been waiting for Wynyard to move.

Helena, naturally, was changed from what she had been when I knew her before. From being a reticent woman she was become transparently candid. You must be very comfortably off when you can afford to discuss your own little weaknesses. She said to me *apropos* of Ethel's refusal of the coveted office, "Ethel is a beautiful girl, but she doesn't like me. Do you think she knows about me?"

I was embarrassed. This wasn't keeping up the conspiracy. I said, "She evidently doesn't know what everybody else knows about you."

"Ah," she said, "you are all too kind. You spoil me. But I love it—oh, I love to be spoiled!" Then her eyes shone very bright. "Now you will see. I will make Ethel like me."

I said, Was that worth while? and she looked at me, pondering—as if the question rather was, Was *I* worth while? She decided, apparently, that I was, for she took an air of decision. "Yes," she said, "it is necessary. I am greedy. I have a sweet tooth, as you say—and we say it too. I have a sweet tooth. I didn't know it—but it is true."

I said, "Oh, you'll get her—never a doubt of it. She's a nice, good girl, absolutely straight. I have known her for years. We are quite good friends. I dance with her once a year."

She opened her eyes. "You dance with Ethel?"

I explained about the servants' ball. "We all dance with her—if she'll have us. But she is in great demand. She's what we call 'the thing'. What Pat calls 'it'."

She smiled, rather wisely, from under contracted brows. "Does Pierpoint call her 'it'?"

I did the best I could. "I don't suppose he does now, because obviously she is not 'it'. But I expect he did, in his day. Everybody did, until you taught them better. I assure you, she's a very nice girl indeed."

Helena threw up her brows, as if to shake Pierpoint off into the air, then nodded her head two or three times. "Yes, I like her. I will make her like me. You will see—you will see."

She began to talk about Hermione, her child—quite naturally, not concealing anything. She said that a very dear friend of hers—a Pole like herself—with whom she had exchanged a weekly letter for more than fifteen years, went to see Hermione once a week at the

Convent where she was bestowed, and kept her regularly informed. She said.

"I suppose I ought not to do it, but I write to Hermione under cover to my friend, and she writes to me. My friend is Countess Voss. If there were any trouble Hermione would go directly to her."

I said that must comfort her.

"Yes," she said, "it is comfortable. It is better than I could expect. She is happy with the nuns. They will not tease her. They know I should not allow it. They are very sensible ladies."

I ventured to ask how old Hermione was. "She is now twelve years," she said. "I have three years—a long time for me."

"To ——?" I asked for form's sake.

"Before she leaves the nuns. After that it will be difficult. I don't know what I shall do, but I need not think of that yet."

"No, you have time enough for that," I said. "Meantime, you need not fret. You know that she loves you."

"Yes, indeed. She loves me." She said that softly, looking down at her hands. Then she added, still more softly, with a pretty sort of cooing, soothing note, "It is the dearest wish of my heart to have her here, with me, with all

of you here Then I shall have my heart quite full. There will be no room left in it."

I said, "Except for Ethel Cook."

She looked up shy, half-laughingly. "Oh, I'm not afraid of Ethel," she said.

That's what I call settling down, you know.

A visit which had been absurdly dreaded, passed off without trouble. Why should there have been trouble? Even if the Marchioness had caught at shreds of rumour, what did it all come to but that Pierpoint had flirted with a married woman? That's how we put it to each other in those days of happy pretence. All the same, the Marchioness came alone—without her girls. Her recognition of Helena was of a glitt'ring kind, of the kind which takes nothing for granted. Not at all *empressee*, implying the possibility of something disagreeable on the sky-line. Wynyard said that she took Helena as one takes a snow shower on the hills. She didn't ask after the Baron, or make any personal references. She talked mostly about the Red Cross, I remember, and St. John of Jerusalem, whoever he might be. Helena talked about Greece and mentioned her dusky Princess Glinka with affectionate mockery. She even dragged Hector in to

confirm an anecdote, and once spoke of Pierpoint by name. The Marchioness smiled more glitteringly than ever, said it must have been delightful, and slid off on to some other subject. It was unfortunate, I thought, that no other women were there. Miss Bacchus had gone to drink tea in the town. Mrs. Jack was golfing with Pierpoint. She saw three men, and Helena. It was impossible to prevent the impression of a snug domestic interior, with a tutelary goddess. The fact was that she had a very tutored air upon her, soft, sweet and sedate. She was almost sleek. She sat by the fire like a weel-tappit hen, indeed, as if she had been born to it. She couldn't help it. That was how she felt about it. She had succumbed to the prevailing fiction.



## XV INTERRUPTION

ON August 13 I was again at Inveroran, but for a very short visit. I had left London on the night of the 11th, arrived on the afternoon of the 12th, and was down early next morning, hoping to shoot with the party, which was small this year.

It was a day of dry heat. There was a faint blue mist rapidly clearing before the sun. The country all about was faintly bleached with drought. The promise of the moment was for torrid weather. It was not yet nine o'clock, but the sky was white. The sea lay like a sheet of burnished steel—motionless, colourless.

Standing on the terrace, looking out over the bay, I became gradually conscious of a strange vessel anchored some half a mile out. You know the way moored ships have of seeming part of the landscape. I had to look long before I made sure that she was new. This was a large steam yacht—with two masts. She was a white boat, with sharp bows,

apparently about eighty tons. The bugee and the flag at the stern drooped like weed in a windless air. I could swear that she hadn't been there yesterday when my steamer brought me up from Glasgow.

I stepped back into the breakfast-room and asked Sandars about her. He had seen her. She had been there at seven o'clock when he got up. Mr. Fairfax the factor had been in; he had asked him. But nobody seemed to know. Sandars said a good many yachts came in during the summer. The anchorage was so good, he said. They didn't stay long. They usually landed a large party for the Abbey ruins (these are at Orianmouth and considered very fine), and took luncheon. In the afternoon they were away, said Sandars.

I went out again to have a look at her. Black smoke straggled out of her funnel and hung like a cloud above her. A motor launch came round her stern and speeded for the quay—two or three persons sat in it, one stood up with glasses to his eyes. I ran back into the house for some glasses, in my turn, but by the time I had brought them to bear the launch was under the land. I examined the yacht carefully—there was nothing to be seen. I saw a man in white jacket, apron and cap pass

along the deck. A cook, I judged. There were no other signs of life. A few shore boats hung about ; but there was nothing doing.

People strayed in to breakfast. Hector came up from the gardens. He was the first. I showed him the yacht. To oblige me, he looked at her, but his head was full of something or other, and he took no interest. "Trippers," he said, with the glasses to his eyes, and "Trippers," as he handed them back to me. Then Pat came out, kilted and brogued for the shoot, with shining morning face and that air of perfect fitness for any mortal thing which is so refreshing to jaded Londoners. He was more alive to the picturesque. "Hulloa ! A sail, a sail ! What have we here ?" He looked long and earnestly. "I bet you she's Italian," he said. "I bet you," said I, for friendliness.

Then came Helena, all in cool white, and kissed her two brothers, and shook hands with me. "I'm going to get the chief's rose, if I can find one," she said. "Who's coming ?"

"I am." That was Pat. Hector had ranked himself without speech. "But I say," he went on, "do look at the strange craft. We are betting on her nation. I say, Italian. You have all Europe to choose from—but you can't

have Italy, because that's bagged. Well, what do you say ? ”

Helena was looking. “ She's very, very beautiful. White and gold—yes, I see the gold lines. And I see somebody aboard In a chair. With coffee. With Turkish coffee. And cold water.”

“ Who is it ? Masculine or feminine ?—Say neuter, do No, don't, because it might be improper.” Pat looked carefully round, in case he had said what he ought not to have said.

But Helena took no notice of him. She was still looking. “ I don't want to look any more,” she said, and handed me the glasses. “ I am going for the rose. The flag is Austrian ” Her eyes loomed, big and heavy. She went away slowly, and Hector followed her without a word. She didn't lift her head so long as they were in sight.

I handed the glasses to Pat I had seen the Austrian chequer-board flag stream out in a little local wind Pat put down the glasses and looked at me. He was serious now.

“ Austrian ! ” he said ; and I echoed him, “ Austrian ! ”

• He said next, “ Did you see that chap in the chair ? ”

"Yes," I said.

"There were two sticks on the deck. One on each side of him "

"I know," I said

"Look here What are we to do ? "

I said, "What can we do ? There's nothing to do. The less you do the better "

He took a turn and came back "Do you think that *she* saw him ? "

I said, "Yes, I do "

She didn't come to breakfast, but Hector saw it through Directly it was over, he took Miss Bacchus apart and explained to her what had upset Helena. Miss Bacchus, like the Trojan she was, cried buskly, "Ho, that's the game, is it ? Well, I'll go and talk to her about it"—and went The chief had gone off with his letters and the paper to his own room. Pat went out on a bicycle to find out what was going on Hector and I beckoned Pierpoint to follow us. Wynyard, who was finishing his breakfast, called out that we should wait for him He came after us, his dog at his heels.

We went down to the river and sat there in the harbour by the aviary All the time we were talking, little yellow and silvery birds

darted across and across like streaks of light.

Hector began on an uncertain note "Pat's gone down to the harbour to find out," he said; "so perhaps we had better wait till we hear what he says. What do you think?" He addressed that question to me.

I said, "It doesn't much matter what Pat says. You may take it as a certainty. I saw him"

Wynyard was looking bleakly at Pierpoint, who had his elbows on his knees and was chewing a leaf. I hadn't reckoned on what followed, I must say

"You there," said Wynyard, with a kind of croak in his voice, "you've brought this on us."

Pierpoint looked up, red all over "I won't take this from you," he said "You had better understand that"

But Wynyard didn't flinch. "philandering has done it Do you suppose you are the God of Love? Do you suppose von Broderode doesn't put it all down to your account? You fool. And do you suppose the Marchioness didn't tell him that Helena was here—and that you were here? Don't you think she owes you one for making a fool

of that poor girl of hers ? How many more women do you want about you ? ”

Wynyard was showing his teeth, and Pierpoint jumped up and towards him. I pulled him back ; and then Hector had a chance of cutting in.

“ You’re only making mischief,” he said to Wynyard “ Surely you don’t want to do that. And you seem to be reflecting on Helena, which I for one won’t have. We came here to see what we could do for her—at least, I suppose we did.” Pierpoint had walked away along the river.

Hector said, “ Some one must go and tell my father. I think he’ll be offended when he finds out that we’ve discussed it without him.”

Wynyard said, “ I’ll answer for *him*. But I tell you fairly, I won’t answer for that chap.” He jerked his head towards his retreating brother. “ He’s rotten,” he added.

We let that go by and listened to Hector. He said that he wished to face the Baron at once. He proposed to go and see him in the course of the morning ; but when I asked him what he thought of saying to him, he wasn’t very definite. Discuss the situation ! Wynyard scoffed at that—but Hector insisted

that he was right. He said that the man must have come here with something in his mind. Well, he hoped to find out what that was. Meantime he hoped that Helena would keep to the grounds. We wrangled about this for some time without getting at close quarters. Hector then said he must go and see his father—and just at that moment Pat came on the scene.

He was out of breath and excited. "I say, I've found out all about it. I saw the harbour-master. She's the *Coryphæus* of Trieste—belongs to a Count Jellyfish or something. Wait, I'll tell you." He produced a paper and read from it—" 'S Y. *Coryphæus*, port of origin, Trieste . . . owner, Count Szombor Jelacics'—did you ever hear such a name? Then I went up to the Marine, where they are all staying. I saw Jellykicks in the hall. He's got bunches of hair in his ears—and the rest of it cut *en brosse*. He *is* a hairy man. Tall chap—wears stays. Then there's another man—sandy man with a perfectly round face—all red. And on the terrace I saw old Welcome Highlander and a cigar. So there you are."

I said, "If you take my advice, you fellows, you will leave them entirely alone. You will do literally nothing, and you will go on as if



literally nothing had happened. If you make the first move you will put yourselves in the wrong. I suppose it may be said that you *have* made it already, and *have* put yourselves in the wrong, but we'll leave it at that. He's here to bore her into going back. He has come out here, in my belief, to put you in a false position. Well, you'll get there if you do anything. Legal process is really his only remedy—and that's very little. If he won't take it, don't try to force him "

I didn't convince Hector, I could see Pat was a boy, and of course wanted to have a slap at them. I didn't expect to convince him. But Wynyard took my side.

"I think he's right. I think we must sit it out " Pat said—to my surprise—"Can't she be got out of it ? "

Wynyard said, No, she couldn't. He said, if she went away, she'd be hunted. Once start her on a run and there'd be no stopping it. She couldn't be better off than she was here. It was up to us to see that, whoever suffered by it, it wasn't she.

And then into the midst of us she came, and stood looking from one to other of four men who loved her. She was pale, and her eyes were heavy.

We all stood up and waited for her. It was no time for forms and ceremonies. Not one of us disguised our feelings.

Pat broke the silence. "Where's Pierpoint?"

She said, "He is with his father"

"Does father know?" That was Pat again

"Yes," she said "I told him He wishes to see you all in his room But I came because I thought that I must see you first" Then she hesitated, and I saw her eyes fill to the brim. She held out her arms—"Let me go," she said "Let me go"

Wynyard threw up his hand. He was crimson "I'll die before you shall go," he said. His eyes were burning and seemed to smite her She couldn't meet them, she quailed.

Hector said—and he was at the opposite pole from his hot and furious brother—"At whatever cost, you must do as you wish. If you want to leave us, it must be so If one thing is certain, it is that you are free"

Poor dear! If one thing was certain it was that she was not free But one couldn't say a word.

•She went on talking, as if to herself, as if protesting to herself. There were tears in her

eyes, tears in her voice. "I have been happy—you were all so kind—how could I be anything but happy? But it is my business to be unhappy. I must not stop to think about it." She shook her head, and wiped her tears away. "Oh, why did you make me happy?" she said to Hector, with a gentle reproach. "Why did you do it?" It was absurd, but very touching. Why on earth? Just for an idea!

Hector would have spoken, but Wynyard brushed him and his words away. "My dear," he said, "you are going to be happy. That's why you are here—and that's why we are here. Come now and talk to the chief. We'll see you through."

He turned her; he turned Hector. She went up the slope between them, her head hanging. Pat and I followed.

In the chief's room, backed by the antlered heads, and long narrow portraits of bewigged Jacobites, we found ourselves in a council of war. Sir Roderick sat, Pierpoint stood beside him. I thought he had taken that place for shelter—but it looked bad. It was his presence, of course, that put us in the wrong. We crowded to the door at first. Helena crossed

the room and went straight to the old man. He put his arm round her and kissed her forehead. Then he told her that she couldn't stop here while we talked. He asked her to trust him to do what was best for her and for the family, and said that he would come and see her directly he had talked to us. She went away quite quietly, without raising her head.

We talked, as usual, all at sixes and sevens. We were in a tight place undoubtedly, because we wanted two incompatible things. We wanted Helena to be happy, and we wanted to have it out with the Baron. Now she couldn't be happy if she stayed with us, nor if she left us and went back to her husband. And we couldn't have it out with von Broderode either, because we couldn't drag her name into our debates with him. Only two of us, myself and Wynyard, had an idea of what the Baron really meant to do. The chief thought that he meant to carry her off, and I believe that Hector suspected it. What Pierpoint thought I couldn't make out. Not that it mattered. He had gone to pieces. We were to know why that was, in time; but we none of us knew it then. Miserable wretch that he was! He saw that we all despised

him—and yet, it's all very well, but what he could have done, I really don't know. He should never have come to Inveroran, you say? Of course he should not. But he was one of those men who only seriously begin to want a thing when it is beyond dispute that they haven't a ghost of a chance of getting it. I am sure that he began really to desire Helena after his check at Wynyard's hands. I think also that her indifference to him was a perpetual sting to him. At this moment I believe that he was sincerely in love with her. But nothing is more certain than that she neither knew nor cared whether he was or not. She was over head and ears in love with Inveroran, and herself a daughter of the house. She may have loved him once, and he had failed her. Yet here she was! Here she was in this house, with every male inhabitant of it, you may say, at her feet. And if she liked the feeling of that, it's no wonder. There were better men than Pierpoint there. Hector was a better man, Wynyard was a better man. Either Hector or Wynyard would have thrown up his inheritance for her. Hector would have taken her to Paris or London and taught her the uses of love in a life of obscure work. I can see Hector, in a Chelsea studio or Soho

attic, as happy as only an artist can be. He would have been a poet, of course, and I don't doubt a pretty bad poet; but he would have been happy, and she would have adored him and thought him a prince of poets. Wynyard would have gone to Canada with her, or to an Argentine ranch. He would have given her half a dozen children, and she would have thought him a king of cowboys. She was like that. She had a sweet tooth, as she said. She wanted to be loved, but much more than that, she wanted to love.

Now Pierpoint, once, had very nearly swept her off her feet. It was he who had persuaded her to run. He had carried her passions, inflamed her imagination; but no more. He had stopped. He had *been* stopped, but she didn't know it. Pierpoint had wanted her, but had never loved her as either of the others would. Pierpoint was a voluptuary, a precocious Don Juan. Helena was no fool. She had her feelings like other people, and they had swamped her judgment. But when the floods subsided, the wits returned to her. He had pushed her over the edge, and hadn't followed her. Well, she had learned to do without him. If she had been let alone she would have done very well without matrimony.

at all She had plenty of love on hand without that

But here, up against us, was that brisk-minded Baron von Broderode with but one idea before him, and no scruples about happiness or unhappiness What were we to do against him ?

While the chief listened to us, I could see which way he himself inclined He loved this daughter of the house so much that he would have sunk his chieftainship for her, I felt sure But what he loved still more was his own dignity. He had stiffened himself into intending to keep her and the chieftainship too. His difficulty was a not unnatural one He was casting about for a moral gloss to overlay his resolution. He was sharp enough to see the rent in Hector's armour. The poor Hector kept saying that Helena must be made happy. Ridiculous—it was only too clear that whatever happened Helena must be unhappy. And, although he admired it, he couldn't quite bring himself round to Wynyard's frank declaration of piracy. "She's here, and she shall stay here," said Wynyard over and over again. This was accompanied by young Patrick's "Good man—good old Wynyard!" By degrees and degrees he slid gently down

into the fine old position of the man of property—the man in possession. “No, no, sir, possession is nine points of the law. We can’t have that interfered with”—and “What, sir! A man comes and flouts me on my own land! He brings his ship into my waters, and stays at my own hotel—and—and threatens me, by Gad! No, no—we can’t have that, my lads” So he comforted himself. It didn’t matter—it was established that Helena was not to go.

Nothing was to be done for the present. We were to carry on as usual. We would shoot, we would fish, play golf; we would show ourselves abroad. All was to be according to the time-honoured ways of the Malleeson clan. “They will stand by us—I know them—bless their red hearts!” said the old chief. But Wynyard didn’t echo him. Wynyard didn’t care whether they stood by him or not.

At the close of our meeting Sir Roderick went off to see Helena. I’m told the meeting was very affecting. She cried in his arms, as she had done when she first came, and he soothed her with his loving and very possibly foolish old words. Then Pierpoint came in—looking, Miss Bacchus said, as if he was going to the dentist—and (as even she allowed)



behaved well. He asked her to forgive him ; he asked her to forget him. Fatuous young man ! She had done that long ago. Of course he really meant, *not* to forget him. But he might have spared his breath. He was nothing to her. But she gave him a sad and gracious smile—and I suppose he built upon it, for he began to lay siege to her again from that hour

Sir Roderick, however, was paramount. She couldn't stand up against him. After all, she may have reasoned, it was her own doing. She had sent a letter to his bosom, and followed it there in person. If he had accepted her it wasn't for her to deny him. He was going to be besieged in his own house—and here he was patting her shoulder and taking it as all in the day's work. She could only listen to him and be grateful. All should come right. Would she not trust them, since they were one and all for her ? What could she say ! She gave herself to his arms, and he led her away

## XVI THE SIEGE OPENS

AFTER luncheon we all felt adventurous Pat and I said that we would go down to the shore and look about us. Hector and Wynyard took Helena up into the hills Pierpoint said that he should go and give Mrs Jack a round on the links, and would drive her down in his cart

Pat was in high fettle It was all pure joy to the likes of him I believe that he had a revolver on his person somewhere. I recognized his sword-stick Then there was his huntsman's knife He was armed to the teeth. We took a short cut over the foothills which they call the braes, and by a lane which brings you out by the Western Bank about midway of the main street. A little below this junction of roads is Rosemount. I noticed at once that there was something going on here. The blinds were up, the windows open. A man was scraping the front door preparatory to a new coat of paint. All agog as we were for the unexpected, here was a flick on the cheek

We walked up the short circular sweep,

and Pat accosted the painter with a "Good day, Donald"

"Good day, Mr Patrick A fine afternoon we are having."

"First-rate," says Pat "I say, what are you up to? Have you got a tenant for this place?"

The man busied himself over his job "I couldn't say," we heard, and then—"But I believe." That's as near as a Highlandman will go. Pat took it as it was meant.

"Oh, you have? I wonder who that will be?"

No answer to that. We walked past him into the empty house The passage ran straight through past the staircase, down a step, and out, past the kitchen and scullery to a glass door Beyond that we saw a decent garden, with a large sycamore tree on a square of grass. Then came a privet hedge—kitchen-garden beyond. The two front rooms had bow windows and a full view of Main Street either way. They were well above the containing wall of the front garden

"A fine strategic point," I said; and then Pat jumped to my suspicion.

"I say, do you suppose he's going to *live* here?"

I said, "That's my little idea "

He looked at me with concern.

"She'll hate that."

"She mustn't know it," I said.

Pat tossed his head. "Know it! That's absurd She's bound to know it. She knows everything—God knows how " Then he wondered, and admired "By George, if you're right—and I believe you are—he's a bit of a great man, is the Baron. He don't do things by halves."

"He's a German," I said. "They don't "

"I thought Austrians were slackers? " he said.

I told him that Austrians were Germans with a high glaze. "But we've scratched the glaze for this one," I said, "and are up against the German."

We were in one of the bow-windows, looking out—which was foolish of us. Just then two strangers turned in at the gate.

"Trapped!" said Pat to me. "What shall we do now? "

"Stop where we are," I told him "That's all we can do."

The two men were dressed with extreme elegance—dark-blue pea-jackets, white ducks, white shoes, white yachting-caps One was tall and slim. As Pat had reported, he was

very hairy. From one point of view he was like a walking whisker. He had cavernous eyes, which at close quarters were of fathomless dark. The other had a more Saxon appearance. He was very fair, very pink, very round-faced. He wore an eyeglass.

They saw us, straightened their backs, and quickened their pace. They entered the house and stood behind us in the doorway. I turned, Pat turned; we took off our hats and made to retire, doing our best to assume that nothing had happened.

Neither of them returned the salute. The tall and hairy gentleman said nothing. The shorter man, with a great deal of colour in his round face, spoke with excitement surging in his voice, and giving it a bell-like resonance.

"That," he said, "was private property. It was a private house."

I said, "I'm very sorry. It was inexcusable."

He patted the ground with his toe. "It was quite so," he said.

The other man looked at the ceiling and murmured to it, "Impossible," in French.

"You must let me explain," I said. "I did not understand that the house was taken. I thought it was to let."



WE REDDED TELLING WHAT WE ATTEMPTED TO TELL



"Not at all, not at all," said the Saxon. "It was to let—yes But now it is not any longer to let "

"*Impossible !* " murmured his friend, still to the ceiling, "*impossible !* "

"In that case," I said, "I have the honour to leave you in possession, with many apologies "

They made elaborate room for us They took off their caps and almost swept the floor with them We retired, feeling what we deserved to feel.

But our adventures were not over. Rounding the gate, we came plump upon the Baron in a bath-chair, which a seaman from the yacht was pushing By the side of him was the dark-skinned woman whom I had heard called Teresa Visconti.

We were so much taken aback that Pat lost his head and I the use of my limbs. I mean that Pat, abruptly enough, jerked out, "Hullo, Baron," in his freshest and youngest voice, and that I held out my hand to him.

He was severely changed in looks, poor chap, but very gay. Disease had deepened the lines, and Nature surged outwards where she could. His eyes were heavily bagged, his cheeks had hollowed, he seemed to hold his head sideways in order to look up at us. His gnarled hands



clasped on his stick shook fearfully. But he was his old galliard self within walls

"Ha!" he said, "here's my old-young friend, the cool cucumber How are you? And how is your friend Patrick? Quite well? That is excellent With me it is only so-so But you see I remember Inveroran I like it so much that after two years I remember it, and the Games of Odysseus And the ball—what? You have a ball this year at the Castle?"

I said that old customs die hard at Inveroran. Whereupon he bent his shaggy brows upon me, and said in his throat, "Yes, they die hard."

Then he changed the subject and asked us, How did we like his house? Pat said it was a good house He addressed the next remark to me

"I owe you that house of mine—do you remember? We talked of Peter Grant, and you told me of the lady, the *bonne amie*, his ancestress? Well, Mr. Peter Grant sells to me. That is now my castle at Inveroran. The Englishman's house is so-called, eh? It is a fine prospect. Don't you agree with me?"

I agreed that it would suit his purpose excellently. He said, "My purpose! What, do you know of my purpose, ha?"

One of the Baron's most valid qualities was that he very rarely got angry. I thought that he was going to break out now—but he caught himself in the act, and bent off on a side track. He turned, beaming, on Pat. "And what will Mr. Patrick be doing in these piping times?" he asked. "How goes it with Oxford nowadays?"

Patrick grinned and said that Oxford was going strong when he last saw it. They exchanged a few pleasantries before we left him. He waved his hand to us and was wheeled up the sweep of his outpost.

We walked down the Main Street, and I had just said that we had learned one thing at least, which was that the Baron expected a long leaguer, when Pat became confidential. He took my arm.

"I say," he said, "he's rather an old sportsman, isn't he?"

I said, Certainly he was.

Pat added more of his inverted praise—such as that he seemed not half a bad old chap—and then went on to muse.

"I suppose she can't stand him—at any price? I don't know, you know, but I should have said he could be good company."

I didn't feel that I could discuss such delicate

matters as underlay these youthful misgivings. What I did say was that Helena had seemed very depressed when she was with him, and was only depressed now when she heard that he was near her again. That didn't look well, I said. I admitted that it couldn't be used as an argument, but reminded him that for what it was worth, she had been extraordinarily happy with us.

He was full of thought. He said, "I know, I know." And then jumped into altruism. "Of course the decent thing to do would be for him to say, Look here, I can see you are as happy as a bird up there. All right—I'm glad—God bless you. And then clear out! Mind you, that's what old Hector would do—tomorrow. But the Baron don't look at it like that."

"Not at all," I said. "The Baron says, She belongs to me. I bought and paid for her. And she's useful—she amuses me."

Pat said, "Oh, shut up. I don't believe it. I've half a mind to go back and ask him."

"For heaven's sake, don't," I said. "He'd make things worse than they are."

"Well," Pat said, "if you ask me, I don't think they could be much worse. Are you going to tell them what's happened?"

I said that I should tell Hector, but nobody else. He said, "Poor old Hector He's badly knocked over this So's Wynyard"

I said, "I must say that if she had to run away, I wish it had been Hector or Wynyard who had persuaded her. There wouldn't have been this absurd siege—and—oh, well, it's no good talking about that."

Pat said, "I know what you were going to say Pierpoint's a rotter—but there he is And she don't care two straws for him And, after all, he didn't run away with her."

"Why the deuce can't Pierpoint go abroad?" I snapped out "The Baron might follow him to Canada"

Then Pat looked at me "You don't think the Baron cares about Pierpoint? I'll bet you what you like he's never given him a thought"

There it was Of course he hadn't

"Hector," Pat said, "would never have run away with her He'd have been in love with her, and she with him—and for that reason alone he wouldn't have done her any harm He couldn't. He's got such a nice mind"

"I think you are right about Hector," I agreed "He's not a strong man, but he's a gentleman Now Wynyard——"

Again Pat looked at me. "Do you want my

real opinion ? I believe that Pierpoint would have got her if he could, but that Wynyard wouldn't let him "

Then in fair exchange I gave him my own real opinion, which was that Helena didn't want to run away with anybody in particular, but was perfectly happy as she was All she wanted was for everybody to be in love with her

Pat shook his head knowingly. " Well, everybody is—including old Two-Sticks In a way, you know You are, I suppose——"

I owned to it, " in a way "

" Well, so am I—in a way "

" And what's your way ? " I said

He told me. " I want her to be happy—I want her to be about, to look at—to be there when I come back, and to make things go But I don't want to run away with her That would spoil the fun. And besides—oh, well—it wouldn't do "

I adjured him to continue ; and he made a rather acute remark " She's one of those sort of women," he said, " who lend themselves to exclusiveness. If I were to let myself fall in love with her—in that sort of way, you know—I should want to lock her up in a castle and have her to myself."

“That’s how the Baron feels about it,” I said.

“Yes,” said Pat, “I know he does. And we can’t have that—can we?”

I said, We should have to see about it.

## XVII HECTOR IN FORCE

I HAD seen some curious looks bent upon us during our afternoon in the town, and felt pretty sure that the place was humming with surmise. Mrs. Chevenix reported as much when we met her before dinner. She said she was bespattered with looks, and thought that she didn't much care about it. "Really, I think the poor dear will have to go," she said. "The whole town must know about it by this time, and you know how they feel about such things."

I said, No doubt. But would Sir Roderick give her up? She didn't know him as well as I did. Poor Helena was now not much more than a symbol.

She said, Surely it could be arranged. Her advice was that Hector and I should see the Baron and try to make terms. I didn't tell her then that I *had* seen him; but I did tell her what I thought we were in for. I told her about Rosemount and the Baron's two friends. "We are besieged, you know. Inveroran is

become a second Troy, and the ships of the Achaians are in the roadstead. Menelaus is putting up his hut."

She was amused. "And Achilles—is he there?"

"I've seen him to-day. He's a hairy man, but very elegant. However, he can't talk Trojan"

"And will they get in on a wooden horse?" she asked me.

I said, "They'll get in on a high horse, if we're not careful"

She looked at me, lowered her voice. "You really think they will——?"

I said, "I do think so. They'll turn the whole place against us, except for a few of the Clan Malleeson. It's rank nonsense, you know, because you aren't bound to have a man to stay with you; but the trouble is with Pierpoint. If it's known—as of course it is—that he's thrown up his commission, they'll put two together—and make a couple. But I sharply suspect that we're in for a fight. Pierpoint won't go, and the chief won't let Helena go either. He has got his back up; but so has von Broderode. However, I'll tell Hector what you say. I'm quite willing to go down with him—if we are allowed."



She told me more "Helena is a strange creature. She has a perfect hunger for people. Do you know that she has won over that good-looking maid who wouldn't have anything to do with her? She told me just before I came down that she was much happier now. I asked her, Why? 'Oh,' she said, 'because I have made great friends with Ethel.' Ethel! I didn't know who on earth she meant—but it's the maid. I asked her how she had done it. She said, 'Oh, I told her of my troubles, and we cried together. I feel better.' She told me that the girl had troubles too—and you know what that usually means."

I protested strongly. I said there wasn't a more virtuous young woman in England; but Mrs. Jack said that you never knew. However, Helena couldn't tell her any more because she didn't know any more. But wasn't Helena extraordinary? she said. "If your troubles were her troubles, I don't think you'd talk about them to another man's maids, do you?" I didn't think you would.

Mrs. Jack began again. "Oh, and there's another thing that she said. I must tell you. She said, 'I am sure that Ethel can help me. You'll see that she will.' I asked her how? She didn't know, but she was quite sure."

There was no doubt that Helena was in much better spirits. I observed her at dinner, and again afterwards when we were in the drawing-room, doing our respectable best to pretend that nothing had happened. I saw her the centre of a group by the fire—for the nights were chill although we were in mid-August, and the log fire made a *point d'appui*. Pat was with her, talking nonsense while he held out silk for her to wind, old Laura Bacchus was near-by, twinkling while she took it all in and absorbed it into her seasoned old head. Wynyard stood with his back to the mantelpiece, frowning down, but evidently at peace with the world. Helena talked and flashed her eyes, softly bright, now at Pat on his knees before her, once or twice quickly up at Wynyard. Sometimes she telegraphed over to Mrs Chevenix, who was playing piquet with the chief. Pierpoint sat by himself, reading. I wondered over the scene—and as I wondered Hector, who was with me, drew me apart. We went out into the hall.

There he said, after some preface about his wonder whether he ought to tell me or not—which I solved for him by saying that I was only stopping here to be of use, and that if I couldn't know what was going on I could be

of no use and had better clear—it was then that he said, “She has dismissed Pierpoint.” That shook me to the core, as Pat says

“What do you mean—?” Then he told me of the scene already related, where Pierpoint solemnly asked to be forgiven, and was forgiven. So Pierpoint, Hector thought, was out of it

So did I think at the time. “No wonder she is happier. She has done the right thing.”

“She has done the only thing,” he said

“Her next move will be to go back to her Baron, you’ll see.” But he said, No, to that

He said, “She won’t go back. She may want to run away—for our sakes. But she won’t go back to him, because she’s afraid to. I think myself that she would like to go back to Vienna and into a convent. She could see the child then, and not be in any danger. She has got to hate von Broderode—to hate and to dread him.”

I asked, “How do you know, Hector?”

“She told us so—Wynyard and me this afternoon. She talked with absolute freedom, as if we were her blood-brothers. She said that she had been wicked, but that it was over. She said that she didn’t intend to be wicked any more. That was how she put it. And

then she said quite calmly, 'I have been wicked, but I have learned by it I have learned how to be good I could not go back to *him* (she never names him, you know, or calls him her "husband") now—for that would be shameful for me I would stay with you all if I could be allowed There would be no harm—except to you That is why I hope you will let me go home' "

"How did Wynyard take it?" I wanted to know.

He said, "She has a great power over Wynyard She knew that she could do what she liked with me All her coaxing and confidence was directed to him She took his arm and reasoned with him He didn't say anything—either for or against; but I don't think he will be much trouble "

Then I told him what Pat and myself had let ourselves in for. He said at once, "If she knows this, it will settle it. She will go But if my father knows it he won't let her This will infuriate him. He'll connect it with the Malleson Curse " He looked at me with wide, serious eyes "And, of course, it does connect with it—remarkably. You see that? "

•I said that I saw what he meant. Providence did not intend there to be a daughter in

Inveroran. The Baron was the instrument of Heaven That was it !

He took it with the utmost seriousness  
“ We are bound to fight it. And we will fight it I must tell my father of this ”

He wouldn't hear of going to see the Baron  
He was deeply incensed by what I had told him—so much so that he failed, I thought, to appreciate the science and capacity for action of the enemy. In fact, I had begun with a nerveless idealist and had turned him into a passion-swept clansman, all raw head and bloody bones

He left me and went over to his father He stood by him, watching the game for a little , then I saw him put his hand on the chief's shoulder. The old man finished out his hand, and then bowed to his opponent and got up Hector told him I saw the news catch him about the midriff and flood upwards to his face His bald head was suffused with crimson He looked like an affronted wild beast—a stag or a bull startled in front of his feeding herd. They made a fine pair, the two of them ; for Hector was flushed and fierce

The chief, amid the concern of all present, signalled to Wynyard and Pierpoint to follow him. They obeyed at once, without any fuss.

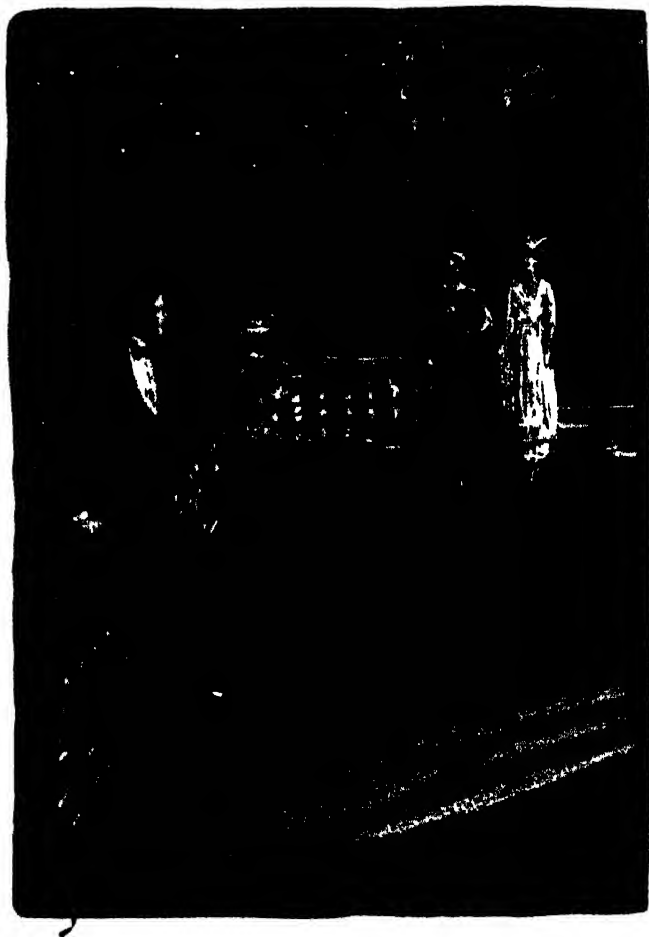
Pat jumped up to go with them His father frowned, faltered—then allowed it They took no notice of me, and I made no effort to follow them out. Directly they were gone Helena fled across the room to Miss Bacchus, and knelt by her side As for me, I was very uncomfortable where I was, and not very clear where else I could be At any rate I thought that I would leave the ladies alone I took a cigarette in the hall and walked about on the terrace

I may have been there the better part of an hour It was a beautiful, soft, clear night. The stars were brilliant, but there was no moon Peace was abroad, the river tinkled below me in the dark, the owls shrilled as they quested Man, as usual, seemed jarringly out of place in such a world as this, because while he so plainly didn't belong to it, he was so plainly doing what the rest of it was after. Those owls were hunting mice; out in the thickets there were stoats after the blood of flying rabbits Foxes were abroad quick-nosed for hens. Great trout in the pools were scattering shoals of fry. It was a world of warfare, and there were my friends of old, my hosts, at the same red game. Helena was

the prize    Down in the town, men were laying schemes for her ; up here too were men, who had her, devising how best to keep her.    What did all this mean ? Must we give up the game ? Were we indeed stoats and foxes—wolves in coats and trousers ? I was in a cynical mood    Was not this what it came to ?

Out of the dark came a white figure    It was Helena herself

She passed quite close to where I was leaning over the balustrade    I had seen her face like a pale disk.    But she did not come alone , she was accompanied by a woman in black, whose face also I saw like a grey moon beside hers    Helena was talking vehemently    “ I must—I tell you I must—but not alone.    I am afraid of him too much    But you will come with me—you are so strong.    I know that you will . . . ”    They passed on along the terrace and I heard no more    They did not return ; they had gone down the steps, probably to the river walk    I had no doubt as to who her companion was    It was her new friend Ethel Cook.    Extraordinary that she should have picked out that girl !    She had dear old Laura Bacchus, and Mrs Chevenix, a brick, if ever there was one—but she chose to confide in a maid !    It was pure instinct, of course.



OUT OF THE DARK CAME A WHITE TRUTH





Women jump at these things, or we think so  
But they communicate with each other in  
ways that men will never understand I  
wondered whether Ethel would go with her,  
whether they would cut the knot that way—  
and was still wondering when Hector came  
out and called me I answered his whistle  
and he came down

He apologized for leaving me in the lurch  
It was become now, he said, so purely a  
personal matter that he had not dared to  
suggest my presence to his father, who would  
not have liked it “He is so edgy just now,”  
said Hector, “that he don’t like Pat to be  
present, just because he had talked to von  
Broderode ”

I laughed “Poor old Pat! He did it in  
the simplest way. He’s not such a Highlander  
as most of you It’s Oxford.”

Hector said quietly, “I was at Cambridge,  
as you know But I understand my father’s  
feeling But however—” he broke away  
“We have had it out at last We are going  
to see it through There will be lots of trouble  
The town will make difficulties, and so will  
the country The clansmen up the glens will  
hold by us We are going to carry on ”

“As if nothing had happened ? ” I asked

He said, "Precisely We feel that this matter of the legend, curse, which you choose, must be faced There never has been a daughter of this house—it does so happen. Now there is one If we give way, my father feels that—I agree with him, we all do——"

"Well? Put it definitely, for my plain intelligence," I said.

"I'll try," said Hector "We all feel that if we surrender Helena now, we shall be giving in to the tradition, with unfortunate results"

"Do you seriously think that the results, if any, of your allowing her to go back could by any possibility be worse than those of her staying on here? I really want to understand," I explained

Hector said, "Yes, we do. If she leaves us we establish a record against ourselves. People will believe in the curse. If she stays, the man will get sick of it, and go. He must die very soon You tell me he is much worse. When he is dead the matter can be regularized Then she will no doubt marry Pierpoint."

"I am certain that she won't," I told him. "She will never have anything to do with Pierpoint again. After all, my dear chap," I said, "what *has* she had to do with him? Aren't you lending yourself to silly scandal-

mongering among the townsfolk by continuing the legend that she nearly ran away with him? The facts are that Pierpoint wanted her to, and that she didn't. There are no other facts, so far as I know."

Hector looked very stiff and solemn. "We can hardly discuss it," he said. "But seeing what she said this afternoon, I don't suppose you'll dispute that she also thought of an elopement. As for the townspeople—what sticks in their gizzards is that Pierpoint is *here* with her—and that the Baron is *there* without her."

All right," I snapped out, "then why the devil don't Pierpoint go away?"

Hector looked pained. "*After* the Baron's arrival? Do you think that would help us?"

Of course it wouldn't. So then I attacked him on the other side of the matter. How did he know that she didn't want to go?

He said that he didn't believe that. She was too fond of his father, and too apt for happiness here to give it up lightly. Besides that, she was morbidly afraid of Broderode. He was on her nerves.

"I said, "Well—we won't argue about it. We can't. But I seriously hope that you

won't let there be any constraint put upon her. If you do that—if there is any sign of that—I must go. Indeed, I must go pretty soon, at all events. I am very little use to you here. Don't, however, force me to go. I'm entitled to say that."

He assured me earnestly that there would be no compulsion. He said, "She had put matters as right as they could be put, of her own accord. They could be no more right if she left us to-morrow. That being so, there was no reason in the world why she should distress herself."

We both looked round. She was returning with her maid, and this time she saw us. She didn't falter or turn aside, but she disengaged her arm, and while Ethel Cook went on, stayed to talk to us. "We have been down by the river. It is so still that you can hear the fishes' lips as they rise to the fly. And all so beautiful—so beautiful—that it made me cry. I would like to be as beautiful as a summer night."

Hector said, "You are more beautiful than that." She didn't rise to it.

"Ah, no, indeed. If I were you would all be happy in this lovely place—and there would be no terrible things between you. Oh, what

can I do ? You have been so kind to me, I feel that I must do something ”

Hector said, “ My dear, be kind to my father, who loves you very much, and has never had a daughter ”

She covered her face with her hands , I felt that she was crying We both stood still, not daring to attempt consolation

She mastered her passion and uncovered her face, but she clasped her hands under her chin “ He knows that I love him If he needs me I will stay with him. It is the least I can do What do I matter ? Is he there ? I will go to him now ” And she went lightly and fleetly away.

## XVIII : THE BATTLE SWAYS

WE rode up Glen Oran to the Clan meeting at Broken Cross ; but a good deal happened before that, enough to remind us that we were really besieged. The rumours flying about the town and countryside focused at last upon a deputation. Before that there had been pulpiteering at work. I don't know that the Mallesons were prayed for by name, but that they were obliquely prayed for I do happen to know. Then there were two letters in the local paper, one signed *Ruat Cælum* and another *Anxious Mother of Seven*, which were guardedly referred to in a leading article. The time was coming on for the Gathering, and something must be done.

So the deputation came, and I caught sight of them from the terrace. Three black-coated gentlemen, obviously clerical, and one tall and lean man in riding-breeches and a checked cap. The chief had been persuaded not to see them—it was put to him on the score of his dignity; and it may even be that he guessed he would

lose his temper. Anyhow he wasn't there, and Hector saw them alone for about half an hour. Everybody was very polite, he said, and no names were named. Refreshments were served, and they went away. He was reticent about it, and I didn't press him; but I collected that the Annual Sports Meeting would *not* be held in the Port Field as usual, because, as I understood, the Deputation had said that the Town would be unable to support it, in view of public opinion. Here was a definite Act of War, and the meeting of the Clan at Broken Cross was to answer it.

The summons was sent round by night—a picturesque ceremony. The messengers gathered in front of the Castle. They all had unlighted torches. Sir Roderick and his sons, Helena with the ladies staying in the house, and myself stood on the steps. The chief gave out the message in Gaelic, which was received with perfect silence. Then Hector produced a lighted torch of resinous pine and stood at the foot of the steps. The men came and lighted their brands from his, and the whole forecourt flared and gloomed as the lights waved in the night wind.

• They turned to the terrace; they sped down the slopes—it was a strange and romantic



sight. We saw them dive down the steep banks of Oran and ford the water, throwing up into full vision as they did so the very fronds of the fern on the farther shore, the very stones and eddies of the swift river. After that they separated, and we could watch, as it were, meteor paths to all quarters of the East, South and North, and see them rise and pause, dip and pursue, wax and wane, according as the boulder-strewn tracks held them. Remote as I was by breeding and temper from the Gael, one could not but be struck by the intensity of their devotion to an idea. Sir Roderick Malleon had little to do with it, Pierpoint and his unlawful practice less. It was the Clan which these fleet and intent messengers were serving, just as certainly as the Jacobite rising of 1745 had not been for the worthless rip Charles Edward, but for a much bigger thing.

The meeting was for that day week, and in the interval little or nothing happened. The house settled itself to a new condition of things, and outwardly with very little difference. The young men shot and fished; the women talked and worked, if they did not accompany the men. Pierpoint seemed to be taking his rebuff quietly. It had sobered him down.

There was nothing of Lovelace or Don Juan Osorio about him now. He took his part quietly, but efficiently, in the sporting exercise which seemed to be our be-all there.

Helena and the old chief became inseparable. She rarely left him for long, and I think never until she knew what he was doing or how he was provided for. I had an idea that he was her only justification for staying where she was. I thought that, like nearly all of us, she had joined her conscience, to keep it quiet. It was, she said, "I am naturally a pious and good woman, who yielding to a sudden fire of the mind have fallen into wrong-doing. I have put away the wrong from me, and out of it there has grown an innocent and honest use to which I can devote what is still innocent and honest in me. That is what I am doing now. Consider that, Conscience, and let me alone."

But if the chief was her strength, the Lord knows she was his. He overflowed with affection for her. She was the darling of his heart, the joy and pride of his eyes. I think it would have gone hard with him if she had left him just then. He was by no means a wise man; he was, in fact, a perfect child in his passionate impulses and inconsiderate acts.

But he had a great heart—and enshrined her in the midst of it, and turned all the fire and flood of it to her honour. An odd result of this was that she became unapproachable by all the younger men. She was set apart, as if she was indeed their stepmother. She was the centre of the house, the *primum mobile*. It all radiated from her, and all flowed back to her again. She wielded it unconsciously, never made a mistake and had no enemies. If Inveroran had lacked a daughter for fifteen years, it took to the having one by instinct, and turned to Helena as a new-born child turns to the breast.

Hector loved her romantically, Wynyard hungrily, Pat gaily, frankly rejoicing in her beauty, grace and charm. Pierpoint, who had conquered her, now that he could not wear her in his cap, seemed not to love her at all. She was quite at her ease with him, lectured him about his domestic delinquencies, tried to get him into activity again—she wanted him to resume his soldiering, recommended the Turkish service, and so on; but she certainly saw less of him than of the others, and I think that was because he didn't care to see more of her. It was more interesting to see her with the silent, fierce-hearted Wynyard. Her

power with him was marvellous. She alone made him talk; she alone, by a mere look of those warm, grey eyes of hers could quench the angry gleam in his. It must have been hard work, continual sword-play on her part; a ceaseless watch, a ceaseless reminder that she was not for him and yet all for him. She could have loved him as he wanted, I don't doubt. I don't doubt but he knew that. But Wynyard was a good fellow, and she was a good woman. She was a beautiful woman, too—much more beautiful than I remembered her when misery and boredom had made her haggard. Her short diet of love had enriched her; as the poet said, it had

“Softened the lines of brow and breast”, but her beauty, soft and sumptuous as it was, was spiritualized too. No Malleeson, at any rate, could have hinted a wrong to her now. For them she was “enskied and sainted”—and she had done it herself. Let that be remembered to her credit.

She rode to the meeting beside Sir Roderick; she rode a milk-white pony, and had a dark-green habit, with a blue scarf wound in and about her black hair. All the Malleesons were

in full war-gear, of tartan and silver buttons, and bonnets, each with its eagle's feather. We wound our way up Glen Oran, and then over a shoulder of Ben Mor, and along another by a belt of pines, through which you could see, far below, a feeder of the Oran like a silver thread. There are still eagles to be seen in those empty fastnesses of the red deer. There was one high overhead when we came out of the wood and saw the clansmen clustered on the brow of a hill round about the shaft of Broken Cross. The chief, who was very superstitious, threw up his hand when he saw the bird, and halted us all to see which way he would fly. He bore off in great easy circles to the South by West, which was on our right as we stood. When his course was certain—after an intense few minutes of waiting—I heard Wynyard breathe quickly through his nose, and Sir Roderick say "Amen." He had taken the right direction, then! and we moved on. It was pleasant to see how gravely Hector lent himself to the augury, and with what interest Helena herself flushed and paled as she breathlessly watched

We were met with a clamour of cheering, of waving bonnets and strange cries which slowed

the spirit of the gathering. Men and boys were there—few women, few girls. Fine, fiery enthusiastic faces, bright and keen blue eyes. I well knew their merits, but had not been prepared for such ardent support of a questionable cause.

Sir Roderick bared his head to the cheering, but did not dismount. He sat his pony throughout, and kept Helena by his side. In fact, it was Hector alone who took the floor on his own feet. He stood on the mound, beside the broken shaft, and spoke to the company in Gaelic. So far as I could judge—though I have no idea what he said—he spoke with perfect ease. He was certainly impassioned; he fetched up deep murmurs of assent, and at moments wild cries which seemed to gratify the old chief. I saw him turn his eyes full of proud tears on the beautiful woman beside him, who sat her horse so well and looked so calm and noble. At the close, when Hector swept her into his speech with an extended hand, a strange scene followed. They came streaming up the hill and held out hands, bonnets, crooks and staves to her. They cried her, I believe, a daughter of the Malleson nation. As many as could reach shook her hand. And then Sir Roderick, swelling with pride, stood up in his stirrups

and shrieked a few well-known words. They were, no doubt, a slogan, or war-cry of the clan. They were taken up with cheer after cheer. The Malleasons were beset with their kindred—Hector, dangerously flushed, quite out of himself; Wynyard burning bright; Pierpoint with his handsome head once more erect and moved, young Patrick wild as a hawk—they could have led an army down the glen if they had willed it, and cleared out the town. Luckily the von Broderode party did not show up that day, or there would have been bloodshed. The pipers struck up and marched round and round the knoll at a quick step. We saw it out to the end.

Going home, I asked Hector what he had said to them to make them so wild. He answered me that it had been nothing dangerous. He had reminded them of the Curse of the Malleasons, he said, and told them how it had been removed by the beautiful lady who had devoted herself to the salvation of the house. He asked them if they would see her go back to slavery and misery; he had pointed their eyes to her tenderness for his father—he had called on them to testify to their gratitude. That was all.

He hadn't mentioned the Baron and his friends !

Pat said to me, " How the old Baron would have enjoyed that ! He *would* have been excited ! " And then he said, as if meditating, " I don't know—but I don't believe he's half so bad as Hector makes out "

That was and had always been my own opinion

It was expected that when the Games were held, as was intended, in the Castle policies, there would be some definite expression of the Town's feeling. It was expected that the Baron's friends would appear and make a demonstration. I don't know how the idea arose ; but it pervaded the Castle and the glens. What actually happened was, in its way, much worse for the Trojans—I mean for the Castle.

The Clan turned out in force, as you might expect—though the absence of its women was remarkable. The Castle was there, of course, but Helena was not. None of our ladies went, in fact.

I have a suspicion that the chief was hurt by that. He had got it firmly fixed in his old headpiece that we were the injured party, and



was dreadfully apt to look upon that as disloyalty which was only common reticence and decency. As Pat said, "The pater pinches himself in the door and thinks you an enemy in disguise because you don't go about in a finger-stall!" I knew afterwards, as a matter of fact, that they did witness our revels from the bank of the river, where they were not conspicuous to the revellers.

We revelled in the customary manner, without the gaiety of the customary meetings. It was less like an athletic gathering, and much more Homeric in consequence. Pierpoint recovered some of his old prestige by winning the hill-climbing contest in great style. Wynyard tossed the caber and no one could come near him. The rest of the competitions were wisely allowed to the clansmen. In the midst of the broadsword heats I saw the public attention distracted, and looked in the direction of nearly all eyes but mine. The Baron von Broderode upon a pony—quite unattended—entered the grounds, and surveyed us all from a small eminence. You never saw such an effect as this produced. An electric thrill seemed to pass from body to body. Sir Roderick literally bristled. Hector stiffened and stared at something else. The contestants

hacked away for dear life, and, like everybody else, pretended that they were interested in what they were doing. Pat and I were sitting together on a heather bed, and watched what happened. We were both the least bit out of touch with the meeting because of our Baronial sympathies. Not that we didn't adore Helena with everybody else; but, as Pat said, we could adore her just as much if the Baron was in the house with her.

He was in no condition to be on horseback. He poked his head, he swayed about. His eyes were fixed. He was engaged in a frightful struggle to be at ease. All at once the pony stumbled, and he was off. Pat and I raced to him, and lifted him. He was out of breath, but not at all scared. "Brave fellows, brave fellows!" he said. "Lift me. I will go back as I came. I am not at all hurt. It is a rule of the game that you go on—ha? Lift me to his back."

Well, we did. The meeting paused in its breath to watch us. We got him back, though he was like lead to lift. Directly he was there, he was all there. His eyes laughed at us—merry, saucy, bold and unconquerable. "If all the English were like you," he said, "the Austrians would never touch you. Have no fear at all."

Pat said that was all right. And was he hurt ?

"Not at all, not at all," he said. "It is a rule of the game" I don't know what he meant by that

"Would you like us to go back with you ?" we asked him

"No," he said, "I stay here"—He was very quick to notice things. He saw my face fall—"unless you wish me to go ?"

I said, "Oh, I think you might go in this instance" He laughed outright

"That is all I want Yes, yes I will go. What you say, I will be clear" He wouldn't let us go down with him—No, no, all went well. Never better. He waved his hand, and turned the pony's head

We watched him go. "By Jove," Pat said, "he'll beat us He's a Roman soldier"

What interested me was the flutter of distress from the bank. Helena in her white dress and black sash, signalling with a handkerchief—like Isolda I went to her. She was in a beautiful agony.

"Tell me, tell me It is well ?" She never named him if she could help it.

"Yes," I said "He won't be helped. He's as brave as he can be"

She was half sobbing—"Oh, I know, I know! Oh, what shall I do? Was—did you see Teresa?"

I said that there was no Teresa—but that she was probably hovering somewhere.

Then she said, "You must go and inquire—soon—soon. Promise me you will go."

I said, "Will you come with me?"

She stopped. She looked down, blushing. I do believe she wanted to go. "No," she said, "I cannot go now. I must ask Sir Roderick. He might be angry with me."

I said, "Oh, he would—" then I promised that I would go, and left her. She dried her eyes and turned to join the other ladies. Old Laura Bacchus lost none of the play. I saw Sir Roderick trotting over the sward to be with her. It was pretty to see her upturned face, and his down-turned. He patted her cheek, and she stood by his knee meekly to watch the games.

I judged my time, and when they were busy over the prize-giving, which Helena began to do very charmingly under the chief's approving gaze, I went down into the town. A few curious looks were cast at me, but of course, I was comparatively speaking, a stranger

in Inveroran    Intercourse with the town had never been the thing for the Castle people. The painting at Roscmount seemed to be finished, but no furnishing had been as yet attempted. I went into the Marine Hotel and asked for the Baron. A page-boy tiptoed away, as if we were going to be shown the San Graal, and I followed. He was bestowed on the ground floor, I noticed. We passed his bath-chair in the passage.

I found him in a window of ample bows, a window which gave on to the garden and a flagstaff, dressed for dinner and in the company of his friends. He received me with a cheer. "Ah, brava, brava!" he said. "Here we have another Ambassador from the proud enemy." He laughed away any possible enmity there might be in his words. The room was full of cigar-smoke, bottles of Rhenish were on the table, long glasses, syphons and all such gear. He introduced me to his friends in great style.

"Become acquainted, if you please, with my good friend Count Szombor Jelacics, and my trusty and well-beloved cousin and councillor the Freiherr von Ostensee—" and then he rang out my name.

The tall and cavernous-eyed young man,

the short and round-faced and very pink-and-flaxen young man bowed from the hips. But the Baron went on—"And permit me to introduce to you also my young and sympathetic friend Mr. Patrick Malleson." He rolled out this name with a mighty gusto—and then I saw Master Pat's grin hover through the murky air.

"Don't play the Cheshire Cat at me, man," I said. "I didn't guess you were here."

The Baron stretched out a benevolent hand and took Pat's arm. "He came because he was a good fellow," he said. "He knows that I am not a bad one. And you also"—this to me—"I will be glad of, if you will allow me. Now you will smoke with us? You will drink with us? Pray help yourself. My friend Patrick has the strong waters of his country. You will have the same? Very good—as you please. But if I were to drink that whisky of yours, in two weeks I should be dead, and the flag at Rosemount halfway down the pole."

In this way he began, and continued to rattle on, drinking in volumes of cigar-smoke with the deepest contentment. You would have said that he hadn't a care in the world. I was, myself, in a conflict all the time, of

admiration and pity; for it was impossible not to see the ravages which illness had made upon him. He was yielding, he was bound to yield; but he fought every inch of the way. It would kill him—but all his wounds would be in front.

While Pat was explaining with infinite patience and lost effort the merits of the game of golf to the Freiherr von Ostensee—who received them with a deferential scepticism delightful to witness, I took the opportunity to say to von Broderode that I was indeed an ambassador, as he had suggested at a venture. He heard me with raised eyebrows and twinkling eyes. He heard me, he nodded his head many times, and ended with a great shrug.

“My dear sir,” he said at last, “if I do not understand women, be sure of one of two things: either I am the greatest fool in the world, or nobody understands them. Not only do I accept your word—that is of course—but I am prepared to understand your word. When women act from the heart they never go wrong. When they act from the head they always do, because they think of so many things at once. Now men—and you will allow me to call myself a man—think of only one thing at a time. And they think with head

and heart together. And they have a will-power which is the servant of both. Not so with women Their will-power is only at the service of the heart. Unless they are mad! And my wife is not mad. Not at all—not at all She is a woman through and through.”

I thought that he was right, though I said nothing He ended up in this fashion, and with a request :

“ Your friend Hector is a dangerous man, because he is a man-and-woman It is so. He is hermaphrodite With the heart of a woman and the brain of a man, he has the will-power added, of a man-woman. His will-power is at service of heart or brain. He puts it here to the work of both He will fail—but he does not know it. He does not intend to fail Now do me the kindness to bring him here. To-morrow my friends will be gone. There is nothing for them to do here. I do not need them. I am sufficient. They are good fellows—I like them ; but they want to fight with your men—and that is absurd. Your red Wynyard would smash them both like oxen. And then he would be transported or hanged. What good is that to me ? No ! I send them away to-morrow in the *Coryphaeus*, and I stay here for Rosemount



to be ready. Already the furniture is on the way. In a week, two weeks, I shall be happy to see you there. We will play piquet together—and talk of politics and history. But bring the hermaphrodite, the dangerous man. Oblige me "

I got up and shook hands Pat came with me As we went up the hill he said, "We shall be called traitors. The pater will be very sick."

"I was sent down," I told him. He looked grave.

"Oh, that's it, is it? I suspected as much." Then he said, "Poor old pater!"

## XIX THE AMAZEMENT OF HECTOR

WE were late home, with barely time to dress, but she lay in wait for me and caught me just as I was about to clear the steps. She came out of the little ante-room, dressed in gauzy black—which made her look her favourite part of the moon clear of clouds. A soft and yet keen persistence in her manner heightened the comparison. She was remote, she was cold, yet she was searching.

“Well,” she said, “so you went down? And what do you bring back?”

“He was glad to see me. He called me Ambassador—Ambassador from the proud enemy.”

Her eyes fell. She seemed to be looking at her own fairness. “I am not proud,” she said.

“You would have excuse if you were,” I said. She looked out into the dusk

• “I am not at all proud. I am very much distracted.”

"The Baron wants to see Hector," I told her.

She opened her eyes. "Hector? Why Hector?"

I said, "Well, Hector is not head of the house, of course, but I suppose he could not expect the chief to go."

She shivered. "Oh, no Sir Roderick would not go."

I said, "Will you ask Hector to go?" She thought that over.

Presently she said, "No—I cannot. Shall you ask him?"

"Do you mean 'Will I ask him?'"

"I wondered whether you would. I wondered what you thought," she said, avoiding my question.

I said, "I'll ask him, if you wish it?"

Her words almost caressed me. "I think you know best. I think you will do what is best."

I excused myself then. "I really must go and dress. I'm in hot water as it is, I don't doubt. If I'm late as well as a traitor, I shall be boiled before I've done."

She said gently, "You are not a traitor. You are kind. You wish to do the best thing."

"So do you," I said. "I know it" Her eyes appealed; a sad smile faltered about her parted lips. It was like sunshine in late autumn, pale and flickering, soon gone. And then I left her

Sir Roderick made no inquiries after his enemy, but Wynyard asked me how he was

"I'm glad you went," he said, when I had told him about the Baron's gallantry. "I should have gone myself if you hadn't"

"I'm glad you didn't," I said. "He has a hairy friend who wants to fight you."

Wynyard said, "That's rot, of course."

"No," I said, "he means it"

Wynyard said, He had better wait till there was something to fight about, because when that occurred there would be nobody here to fight with. That was the nearest Wynyard ever went to admitting that it would be good to run away with Helena. I am sure that he had never hinted at such a thing to herself. But I daresay that she knew all about it, all the same.

Hector agreed to see the Baron. He made no difficulty about it. "I am perfectly willing to see him, but I hope he understands

that I don't desire it I shan't conceal my opinion of his conduct, of course."

"I expect that he has his own ideas about that," I said, "and honestly, my dear chap, you'll find him a hard nut to crack."

He gloomily accepted that.

I thought I had better say one thing more. "His case is that, between you, you have induced his wife to desert him. His strong impression is that it was you who did it."

"He's wrong," Hector said. "I am very glad that she did it, but it wasn't my doing."

"My dear man!" I said. "You fell in love with her at Gironoggio"

"I did Immediately."

"And she knew that"

"Probably."

"That made her dissatisfied with her lot."

"Good heavens!" said Hector, "if it did that it was worth it."

"Then she came here, and you all fell in love with her."

"Well?"

"Then you brought her back here."

"Well?"

"That's the Baron's case," I said.

He replied stiffly to that, that the Baron had a good advocate. I was unable to deny

that I was, at the moment, very much on his side—though when we went after the others into the drawing-room, and I saw her the centre of a pretty group about the fire, I confess that my heart was open to the pity of it. They were so unfeignedly happy, there was such a cosy look about them. Here was the very emblem of home. Old Sir Roderick sat in his elbow-chair, his fist supporting his head. The other hand was on Helena's hair. She sat on a stool below him and was reading to him in a low voice. Near her Pat lay back in an easy-chair. His hands were clasped behind his head, his eyes were fixed on the ceiling. He made a long straight line from his chin to his toes. He listened, he smiled. Pierpoint was watching her from the other corner. Wynyard, as usual, stood to listen. He was like the sentinel flamingo, watchful, on one leg, while the others feed on the sea-flats. Miss Bacchus was playing patience by herself, but with a caustic comment now and then for what she overheard. "Silly ass! What on earth did he do that for?" I heard as I shut the door. The book was "The Earthly Paradise," and the tale concerned Gudrun and her criss-cross love-affairs. It was a pretty group, and as snug as Christmas.

I thought of the Baron, with his liqueur and his cigar, his avid, wayward hands and his daring blue eyes I thought of her alone with him, without an intimate word to say. I saw what Hector had seen at once with his diviner's eye and his tentacles at work. I said to myself, "You pretty, gentle creature, what mercy did they show you who taught you their comforts?" And at the moment I felt that if anything could be done to save her from her portion I could do it.

Hector and I went down to see the Baron. It was a fine afternoon, and he received us in the garden of the hotel. The moment we appeared he waved his hand to me Then he took off his Homburg hat. That was for Hector's benefit He did not offer to shake hands; but that was the only sign of enmity he showed. Hector was very stiff and solemn, which I thought was a pity. The Baron was perfectly at ease

He began. "I have wished to see you because I have something to say to you. I should have written to you myself; I should have said, My dear sir, come and see me! We will have a few words together in private. It would have been better in private—what

I have to say. For me, I don't mind, but for you it would be better. . . .

"But you would not have come. You have your own idea of me. You think I am a savage. You think I tear and mangle. You would say to yourself, I will have no dealings with the wicked. So you shall hear what I have to say in the presence of your friend. . . .

"It is not the first time that your nation goes to work teaching people their own business. You see me at Gironoggio. You say, Here is a wicked man. His hand shakes; he is not like me. He smokes many cigars, I don't like cigars. He enjoys himself—that is bad. You see my wife, you like her. You say, She is a beautiful woman. I could make her happy—she would be happy with me. To see her with that old savage makes me unhappy. Therefore, you say, it makes her also unhappy. Then you make her acquaintance and you tell her how unhappy she is. That is why I call you the dangerous man. You are dangerous because you see what you think you see, and you teach other people your disastrous wisdom! . . .

"You see only yourself, my dear sir. That is your little mistake. In my wife you see



yourself unhappy. In myself you see yourself a fool. You think me a fool, but I am not at all a fool. I am a sensible man because I know what I want."

He sat there rosy and twinkling, a spectacle of weather-worn strength, his terrible hands flickering as he held cigar and match. He bent his head forward and looked out over his gold-rimmed glasses, as he said these words. "I shall win in the end, you will see, because I have nothing else to do. I shall get what I want. It is my career. I am not likely to make a mess of that. You have youth and good health and your family behind you to make you strong. But I, my good sir, have ennui. I must beat that or it will kill me. And I do not intend to die. Do you not see that?"

I knew he was speaking the truth. To my mind he was unanswerable, and it is the fact that Hector had no answer for him. He sat stiff in his chair for a little time. Then he got up, murmured a few inaudible words, and went out.

There was nothing for me to do but follow him.

.

He was silent for the length of our walk

up the main street. When we got within sight of the gates he stopped.

He lifted his head. "I shall fight him," he said. "If I die for it I'll fight him. For it comes to this, that a man can possess a woman's body and soul if he is only cruel enough. If I took Helena away and made myself master of her I should beat him. It is because I will not degrade her in the eyes of the world that he beats *me*. But he shall not. I'll fight him for her."

I saw that he was very much moved, and did not care to argue with him. What I did say was that the thing ought to be put squarely before her. It was a case for a woman, I said. Let Laura Bacchus have it out with her. Put her to work. He pished, and said, "Damn Laura Bacchus."

But I was nearly right. It was a case for a woman; but Laura Bacchus was not she.

## XX . PIERPOINT

I HAD had my eye on Pierpoint for some time. Love was awake and walking in his breast again. He was like Hector in that, that he was always in love with somebody ; but unlike him in that his love couldn't live on air. He must reassure himself with testimonies ; he must wear a gage

I watched him, not without amusement, to see how wary he was. He had need to be, for Wynyard was mortally jealous of him. Those two never spoke to each other by any chance. At the best of times they had had little to say to each other ; but since Helena had been here the same room could hardly contain them

There were few, if any, overt acts. I guessed at what was going on by the recrudescence of the conquering hero about Pierpoint. His moustaches took an upward twist ; his clothes were more *soignés*, his neckties, the tops of his stockings were more carefully contrasted. He talked to Helena again—upon carefully impersonal topics, but if you were interested

enough to be careful you could detect a stream of tendency, an implication. Sometimes there was a complete double sense to what he said, to which, when once you got a clue, you must needs devote yourself body and soul. And he did it pretty well. I fancy he was enormously pleased with himself. He flattered himself that Helena was completely instructed, and Wynyard completely in the dark; whereas I am sure that it was just the other way. Helena was a fairly simple character—as simple as a thoroughly pretty and thoroughly petted woman can be. She was, of course, petted all round, and she loved it; but she took it quite innocently. I don't believe she wanted to marry any of those chaps, though at the same time I believe that she would have married any one of them who asked her—except Hector. She was rather afraid of Hector. His ideas of love were too fearful and wonderful for her. While they were new they would have depressed her, when they were familiar they would have bored her. I think she saw all that from the beginning. But any one of the others would have done. She didn't want anything of a husband but petting; and as she was being petted to her heart's content at this time she didn't want a husband at all.

But Wynyard was altogether different. He wanted her dreadfully. This need had changed the whole habit of the man. It had made him morbidly suspicious, morbidly acute. His passion was driven inwards, it had to feed upon his own vital juices. He had never been a communicative man. He was only really open with his dog, and with the wild creatures which he pursued so remorselessly and killed with such art. I could very well imagine him telling the spirits of the wind and the rain of his hopeless trouble and his infinite desires. They were infinite because Helena could never have given him all he wanted; they were hopeless because he knew it. But she drew him in and in, he flickered and flacked about her pale flame. He was scorched and maimed but he stayed on. The one immediate resource he had—and that was a savage one—was in watching his brother Pierpoint. He hated him; and Pierpoint seemed to know it and to snatch a fearful joy in outwatching and outmarching him.

Laura Bacchus was convinced that there would be bloodshed. She said that she couldn't rest in her bed until she knew that these two were safely in theirs. Almost every night, she told me, she crept out into the corridor, flitted along it and stole upstairs to the next—

to listen. She used to carry her candle, and when it showed up Vixen's green eyes, she knew the bitch was on her master's doormat, and that all was well. That's what she told me, after the event. For there was an event, and it came suddenly, and soon.

I don't know whether it was a week, or more, or less, after Hector's and my visit to the Baron. More than a week, I think, because Rosemount was furnished, and the Baron installed when next we saw him. He had been at one of his bow windows, and waved his cigar-hand to us as we passed. Some people had come to stay at the Castle—Mrs. Muir and her two girls, Elspeth and Grizel, were there on their way further North; and a young friend of Pat's, a nice boy called Chesilworth. They were very good for us, made us brisker, and gave the servants more to do. We used to dance in the evenings; and this gave Pierpoint his chance, and made Hector sad, and Wynyard furious. Neither of those two were dancers.

Pierpoint, having done his duty by the Muir girls—with a dance apiece—spent, and proposed to go on spending, the rest of this opportunity with Helena. He was a wonderful dancer, and naturally she liked it. The first

night Wynyard stood it; the second night he got through a bit of it, but then disappeared, and no one knew where he was. The third night there was no dancing at the house, because we all went down to dine upon a cruiser that had come into the bay. We dined and danced there, and Wynyard could stand that because Pierpoint was one of many, and of very little account at that. Helena, with a capricious twist to her head, chose to dance hardly at all that night. She stood mostly by the chief, and danced square dances with the Captain and the Commander. Indeed, poor Wynyard got a bit of an innings, for one of the lieutenants was a friend of his, and was presented by him to Helena. The three of them sat out for a dance or two, which must have been very jolly for the lieutenant, I should say. However, he was a good sort.

The next night there was trouble. Pierpoint himself urged for dancing, and got it. This time Wynyard went out on to the terrace and padded up and down like a native with the toothache. After a time I joined him and we paced up and down together under the stars of one of the most beautiful September nights I ever remember.

I don't know how long we had been there

when we saw a white dress glimmering away from us. I didn't need the quick short gasp from Wynyard to know who it was. It was Helena, of course. She had slipped out through the little side door which gives from the ante-room on to the terrace. She was alone as we saw; but she was not to be alone for long. Wynyard left me to go after her, and had just reached the door from which she had come when that opened again and Pierpoint blundered out almost upon his brother.

Wynyard turned, and they stood facing each other. Neither of them spoke for quite a perceptible time.

Then Pierpoint said "Where's Helena?"

Wynyard—I could hear his pumps at work—answered, "She's in the garden."

"Oh," said Pierpoint, "that's all right," and made a move.

Wynyard said, "Stay where you are."

Pierpoint had no answer at the moment; then said breathlessly, "What on earth do you mean?"

"What I say," Wynyard replied. "You will stay where you are, or go in."

"It's not for you to tell me where I'm to go."

"In this case it is."

A third figure came to the door and stood in



the light of it It was Ethel Cook, with a silvery cloak for Helena

"Go back with your wife, you dog," said Wynyard ; and left him facing the girl.

She shuddered and shrank against the door as if some one was going to hit her I saw her mouth open Her eyes were hidden in the shadow of their own brows "I never told him—I swear I didn't," she said in short gasping breaths. But he left her and walked past me to the other side of the house. She stood looking out into the dark Her mouth was still open I thought she was going to faint, and went to her.

"Ethel," I said, "I heard all this, and am awfully sorry for you."

She was struggling with her tears. "I didn't tell him—I never told a soul," was all she could say.

"No, no," I said "I'm sure you didn't. Nobody thinks you have done anything wrong. Nobody who knows you would think so."

She had now covered her face in her hands and was crying. "He made me do it—because I wouldn't—because I couldn't——"

"Don't tell me," I said. "I don't want to know. But if you take my advice, you'll tell the Baroness. That will be the best thing in

the world." She listened, though she went on crying. I went at her again.

"The Baroness is very fond of you. She knows what you are thought about up here. She has troubles of her own, as you and I know. Well, if you tell her your story, you'll help her as much as she'll help you. So do you take my advice, and when she goes upstairs, tell her all about it. You needn't be afraid of Mr. Wynyard. *He* won't tell her. I'll answer for that."

She had stopped crying. She was thinking. Then she said, "I never told anybody because I didn't want to make mischief. I'd have put up with almost anything. I *have* put up with a good deal—but I couldn't hurt Sir Roderick—not if I was driven out."

"You won't hurt Sir Roderick by telling the Baroness. I promise you that," I said.

"No," said Ethel. "I know that. He'll take almost anything from her." I could see that she was convinced. Presently she thanked me and said so.

"It's bound to come out now," she said, "whatever I do. And I'd rather tell her myself than have anybody tell against me." Then she thanked me and went away. Helena had no cloak that night, and no cavalier.

I went into the smoking-room and got myself a whisky-and-soda. The two boys came in, Wynyard and Hector together, then Sir Roderick for his customary dram and a pipe. I had plenty to think about, and as there were plenty of them, I had no need to talk. I don't think that I was astonished at what I had heard, because Pierpoint was Pierpoint. He wasn't the sort to stick at a wedding if he couldn't get what he wanted any other way. And he would always think that he would never want to do it again. With your genuine amorist every affair is for good and all. And, as he figured it all out, I've no doubt he thought a secret marriage, with stolen meetings, stolen confidences, stolen pledges of troth—would be a very romantic affair. As, no doubt, it was—for him. But the girl herself made me wonder. how on earth she had seen what she had seen and kept her patience and her nerve—that beat me. What a fine pride to her! What a dignity! Nothing asked, yet nothing refused. No hope, yet no despair. And no illusion after the first week. How could there have been? No, she must have said to herself, Men are made so, and women have to give way to them. She must have had a certain scorn of her scampish husband too. I could imagine that short upper

lip of hers curving to her fine nose as she considered him and caught sight from an upper window—her duster in hand—of his goings-on with fair lady visitors. Yet she was never tempted to shatter his bubbles for him! Never itched to put a hand on his shoulder as he stooped to whisper or entreat—or to shake him with a “Come to me, husband!” No, no. Men were made so, and women must give them their heads. Oh, proud and patient Ethel Cook!

One by one they went to bed, but Wynyard remained. He pulled at his pipe for a while, meditating. He was quieter than he had been for some days.

Presently he stirred, and gave me a steady look. “It came out of me directly I saw her coming,” he said. “I was savage and let out. I’m not sorry, except for Ethel. I don’t think I ought to have done it—but I let out. I shall go on now I’ve begun with it. She’s a good girl. He shall do the square thing by her now.”

“You needn’t say anything just yet,” I said. “Leave her alone for a bit. She’s telling Helena about it. I advised her to.”

He stared; then showed relief. “Oh, I’m glad of that. You were perfectly right. That’s

the best thing she can do. Helena will be kind to her."

"Yes, I know." I agreed with that; but then I warned him that it would react on Helena.

"Not a doubt of it," he said. "That black-guard has been making love to her again. When I was out in Vienna I warned him."

"Oh, that was what you did! You let him know what you knew?" I said.

Wynyard nodded.

"He knew then. I was bound to stop him. And I did. He kept himself in hand after that. He has behaved decently here until lately."

I asked him how he had found out, and he said it was in a very curious way. Five years ago he had been in Berwick for a night on his way to fish with the G——s at Coldstream. A man—a clergyman, in fact—had come up behind him where he was standing in front of a shop window with a "Good evening, Mr. Hammond," and when he turned about, still held out a hand. Wynyard had denied the name, but the man, though more doubtfully, held on to it. "Surely I'm not mistaken," he said. "Surely I married you this time last year?" Wynyard said, "Indeed, he did not"; and the clergyman said, "Well, if it was not

you it was your brother." He admitted that the facial likeness was not extraordinary ; but from behind, he said, he would have sworn to it. Wynyard asked, "Whom did his brother marry?" And the man replied at once, "a Miss Ethel Cook, a handsome young lady." "Then," said Wynyard, "I thought it was worth looking into. He showed me the Register. *Philip Hammond*, in the fellow's own handwriting, and *Ethel Cook*. By special licence too. Six years ago this August."

"And you kept it to yourself?" I asked him.

"I did," said Wynyard. "We never loved each other, but it was no business of mine."

"What do you suppose he'll do now? Will he face it out?"

Wynyard thought not "He wouldn't do that. There'd be no fun in it, you see. And again, there'd be no fun out of it. He likes a cake in the cupboard, but he wants any amount on the table too. I think he'll go abroad."

"And let her rip?"

"Yes. He'll be pretty sure my father will get to know about it. He'll argue it out with himself. He might send for her in a few years' time, when he's had his whack."

"Do you think she'd go?"

"You can't tell. At least I can't. I don't know anything about women."

"The chief will hear of it, no doubt," I said.

He thought so. But it wouldn't be from him, he said.

## XXI SURRENDER

THE man who put out my things said to me as he was going out of the door, "The Baroness's compliments, sir, and she would be glad if she could see you for a moment before breakfast. She will be in the morning-room "

There she was, when I came to look for her, dressed in black, with a red rose in her belt, and another in her hand for the chief. She was pale, but quite composed.

She thanked me for sending Ethel to her. She said it was a great compliment. There was nothing she loved more than being useful.

"I am sure that you were useful to Ethel," I said.

"Yes, I hope so I kept her with me all night. We were useful to each other. I suppose you know—I suppose you understand that this is a great shock to me."

I said, "No doubt " And there could be no doubt at all. Had she applied the balms of *Araby* to her unguarded lips? But if I gathered aright there had been more than



a kiss or two. Wynyard would not have put the screw on unless there had been urgent need for it. Pierpoint had beset her, seriously. She only knew how much need there had been for them, when Wynyard brought up his reserves. All this must have been terrible to the poor lady. Nothing brings a conscience so sharply to the ache as the conviction that one has been fool as well as rogue.

I could see that she was, indeed, sore all over. She said sharply and stiffly, too, "Of course there is only one thing for me to do."

"Oh, no," I put in, "there are lots of things for people like you to do."

She stopped, and recovered herself. "What do you mean?"

I said, "You see, you have the poor girl to comfort. She must be put right with the world and herself. Nobody but you can do that. Nobody here, at least, has such tactful fingers. Do you want her to weep out her troubles on the cook's bosom? Or Miss Bacchus's?"

That steadied her. She softened immediately. "I will do everything for her," she said. "Indeed, we have talked of that. She wishes to leave. She has asked to come with me. I hope she will."

I said, "I don't think Sir Roderick will like that. He will want to be told the reason."

She looked down. "No," she said, "he won't. If I go, he'll be glad for her to be with me." Of course she was right. Ethel would be a hostage.

She then told me that she should go back to the Baron to-day or to-morrow. The Muirs were leaving to-day. It would be to-morrow then. That would give him twenty-four hours' notice.

I said something—I don't know what—about the distress of Inveroran. She said that she knew that. "They love me, and I love them. They will be unhappy, and so shall I. But I have done wrong. I didn't know it because I was too happy. Now I know it and am not happy at all. You think me wicked——"

I protested to Heaven. "You do not, because you are kind, or because you understand. Well, I won't be wicked any more. It is a great pity that one can't be happy if one is good." Then she held out her hand to me. She was an innocent, tender creature. I was very much in love with her myself.

• At breakfast, Sir Roderick asked where Pierpoint was, but got no answer until Hector

came down, rather late. He had a note in his hand which he took over to his father. He stood by him while he read it. Pierpoint said that he had gone South, and wanted his servant to bring him his things. He was sorry he hadn't had time to say good-bye. He would write to his father from London.

Those who were surprised and those who were not surprised didn't show any sign of disturbance. Patrick said he had missed the first decent fishing day we had had. It was true that yesterday's rain had been followed by a frosty night. There would be sea-trout for the asking.

But Sir Roderick was annoyed. He frowned, fiddling the note in his hands.

"He suits himself—he may do as he pleases. I consider it a want of respect to the lady of the house. That's all I have to say." He frowned as he spoke in Helena's direction. She blushed gratefully, and beamed her thanks and deprecation at once. It made her job no easier, lady of the house for twenty-four hours longer.

By lunch-time, when the Muirs were off, everybody concerned knew that Helena was going except the chief. She chose her own time for telling him. He had his siesta in

peace, anyhow. Wynyard carried off his personal woes to Oran side, and made the sea-trout smart for it. Goodly hecatombs of them were offered up. He didn't appear until dinner-time. Pat went fishing, too. He said, "Frightful score for the Baron, I must say. I don't see why we shouldn't take our licking in real style and ask him here. I believe he'd come, too."

I said, "I believe he would if you asked him, Pat." Pat said that he'd do it for twopence. Then he said that he thought he should clear out in the course of the day. "We shall have an awfully wet night of it if we don't look out."

Miss Bacchus, I believe, when she was told, said, "Well, my dear soul, what else could you do?" or words to that effect. She was arguing from *a priori* grounds, I suppose, for it is unlikely that Helena confided Ethel Cook's scrape to her vigorous treatment. But certainly Miss Bacchus put two and two together, for she said to me in her caustic way, "I suppose the sweet tooth bit on a peach-stone. That hurts." Then she said sharply, "Do you think he's gone to London?"

"Who? Pierpoint?" I parried her. "Oh, why not?"

"It's a long way to throw a peach-stone," said Miss Bacchus. "It must have hurt."

The Baron, like the gentleman he was, replied to Helena's intimation of surrender that he would meet her at Euston, naming the train. He must also have told her the name of his hotel, as afterwards appeared. This was letting Sir Roderick down gently, but it involved an early departure for Helena on the morrow. She was a long time closeted with the old chief, telling him her story. They came into the hall together when tea was there. He looked very sick, indeed, but made the best of it. Many an anxious glance passed from her towards him, and he reassured her with smiling eyes whenever he caught the beam of hers. You never know what women feel about these things. They have so much more self-possession. Hector, of course, was told, and had his half-hour of consolation. Wynyard was prepared, naturally, but I suppose she gave him something. It was astonishing to me how she managed all those men.

We all had our work cut out for us that last night of her escapade; but it went off pretty well. There was no reading. Pat and

his friend made us all play pool After that we had billiard-table cricket, and the boys got excited and made a noise. She went round and said her good-byes. She would go very early in the morning, and nobody was to get up except Hector.

So she went about and got through with it. Miss Bacchus had a kiss on each cheek, Pat had a kiss and gave one; Hector would be seen later. Wynyard put his hand on her shoulder and said, "Good-bye, Helena", her cheek flickered, but was not kissed. I kissed her hand, and then she was taken to Sir Roderick's heart.

He was very much moved, but without a fuss. He kissed her fondly, and said something which she answered—inaudibly Then she went away; and there was the end, or what seemed to be the end, of a dream

Meantime Sir Roderick didn't know that it was his daughter-in-law who was going as Helena's maid. He had had her in to his room, and had made her a little speech in the presence of his sons. He had made her a handsome present, and had said how glad he was that she was to be companion to so dear a friend as the Baroness von Broderode. To all of which Ethel Cook had listened with

becoming gravity She had then had her hand shaken by everybody in turn and had retired.

Wynyard caught her upstairs, he told me, and had a talk with her. He had not then told Hector, but he said that when he did, it was probable that Hector would tell his father. On his own part he undertook, at a word from her, to put everything on a proper footing. She thanked him and said that she preferred to be as she was She said that she wasn't fitted to be Pierpoint's wife, and was quite contented. That was all, so far

Hector saw them off in the morning—in a bitter driving mist of rain and brown leaves. She had another good-bye with the chief, I heard; and he was on the steps when she finally departed. Hector went on with them in the motor to the junction.

Here, for a time, ended my acquaintance with the prettiest and most pettable lady I had ever met She was fitted to be the wife of any true man, or, indeed, of any dozen, for her tact and sweetness of disposition were such that discordance could not be where she was. No man could hurt her, and I don't believe that the Baron ever did,

though his hands maybe were not of the lightest. If you ask me my candid opinion, I think she was fairly contented 'until, in a momentous hour, Hector saw her unhappy and persuaded her that she was so. The Baron had seen that with his usual acumen. By comparison with Inveroran her life with a vivacious old invalid may well have been monotonous; for what woman could resist a houseful of lovers? And so she may have found her return an anti-climax. The Baron was going, fine fighter as he was. A stronger enemy than Hector had him held. I suspect that he took to his bed, when he reached it, and once there, there was no getting out on this side Phlegethon. Well, he had warmed both hands, back and front. There were few phials of pleasure in which he had not dipped. I suppose he was a horrid old scamp; but I always liked him. He took things as they came, and lost neither head, heart, nor temper. If he tyrannized his Helena, I am certain that he never snarled at her. His appetites were hearty, his tastes somewhat gross, his pleasures the earth. Farewell to him from me at least, as a man of courage and resource.



## XXII : PASSION OF SIR RODERICK

I HAVE said already somewhere that Sir Roderick was a man who proceeded by explosions, like a petrol-engine. A spark kindled him. A rapid series of puffs and snaps, a whirring and grinding of cogs, and he was off very often upon the top of you. So he had advanced from youth to maturity, and thence to eld.

But he was a slow-witted, heavy man, too. He had his fixed ideas, and was himself fixed in them. When one of these was disturbed by outside impact he could at first see only a wanton outrage by the jostler. It was only by degrees that he appreciated what might have caused the collision; that the jostler might himself have been jostled. And when, by degrees and degrees, the truth stood bare, it was quite as likely as not that he would yield to panic—and do considerable damage.

Put it like this, that his mental apparatus was like a regiment on the march. All goes well so long as it covers the miles without

obstacle, to the tap of the drum or the whistling of the ranks. But interruption of routine flurries it—the van is hustled by the rear. The drum-taps are intermittent, the whistling ceases. All at once somebody cries out, “*Nous sommes trahis !*” and everybody begins to shoot.

So it was with Sir Roderick. He believed himself supreme in his house ; he believed that he pushed that which really pushed him. The household routine went on, and he with it. He believed he was taking a great deal of exercise, he took for granted a vast amount of homage and gratitude from dutiful sons and adoring servants. He pictured the boys pausing in their daily round of sport or fun to look at each other and say, God bless the dear old chief for all he is doing for us ! He saw himself as a benevolent despot ; and when he found out that he was nothing of the sort—well, he got very cross, and, as I say, did a great deal of damage to himself and others.

When I came down to breakfast on the morning of Helena’s departure I was met at the door by Pat and his young friend. They were tiptoe for a flight. Pat, meeting

me, rounded his eyes and pulled his mouth sideways. He durst not say anything or stay his retreat

I went in, and saw Wynyard alone at the table, red in the face, looking steadily at his father, who stood with a letter in his hand. I turned to fly, but was too late.

The chief was on me. He wheeled round and I saw the fire in his dark-blue eyes

“Don’t leave us—there is no need for that. I think, indeed, that you may be able to move Wynyard’s tongue. My son’s tongue, sir, which won’t wag for his father.” He held me out the letter. “Be pleased to read that, sir, and to understand what kind of children I have reared—to disgrace me, by God.”

I held the letter in my hand. I said, “Do you really want me to read this ? ”

Sir Roderick was now solemnly inclined upon his course. “You will oblige me.”

It was from Pierpoint.

“MY DEAR FATHER,—You have no doubt heard from Hector or Wynyard, or both, of my leaving Inveroran, and the reason of it, or what they suppose the reason of it is. I don’t trust to their sympathy, and don’t

particularly want it; but I should like you to know my own account. I left at once, because it seemed the kindest thing to the persons involved. I have written to my wife to desire her to join me here, where I have made arrangements for her establishment. When you are alone and willing to see me I will come up and give you full particulars. But I definitely decline to meet Wynyard, who had reasons of his own for the course he took, and lost his head as well as his manners.

“Your affectionate son,

“P G M. MALLESON.

“P S—I propose to live abroad and hope to get into the Turkish service.”

He wrote from an address in London.

I handed the letter back under the glare of Sir Roderick's eyes.

“Well, sir,” said he, “what have you to say?”

That was a little too much for me. “I have nothing to say,” I answered, “and don't know what you expect me to say. I had nothing to do with Pierpoint's marriage, if you mean that”

He shook the letter at me. “But you

knew of it. You knew that he had a wife—here—in this house——”

“He doesn’t say that,” I said rather foolishly.

“You prevaricate, sir. She was in this house. She was one of my own servants. And you knew it.”

I didn’t know what on earth to do. He was so angry that I should have made him worse whatever I said. Wynyard cut in to the rescue.

“He knew it because it was burst upon him. He knew nothing of it until then. He heard me mention it. He was with me at the time. It was not for him to tell you. It was for Pierpoint or me.” That turned him blazing on Wynyard.

“And why the devil did you keep me in the dark, sir? Who are you to say what I am to hear and what not hear?”

“Well,” said Wynyard slowly, “I am not the husband of the lady, anyhow.”

Sir Roderick laid hands upon himself. If he hadn’t Wynyard would have felt his grip. He became dangerously calm.

“Have the goodness to tell me why you mentioned it, as you are pleased to say, when ‘you did.’”

Wynyard flushed again.

"I regret it. I should not. But I don't want to drag personal matters into discussion."

"You decline to answer my question?"

Sir Roderick said, still very quiet.

"Yes," Wynyard said, "I do."

Sir Roderick paused, as it seemed to me, in the very act to spring. But I suppose that even he recognized that there are limits to the authority of fathers, chieftains though they be. He glared, his mouth was open, he showed his fine teeth—marvellous teeth for a man of his age: but he left Wynyard alone, and turned to the bell-rope. That he tugged at, and stood by it, with his hand still grasping it, until it was answered.

"Ask Mr. Malleeson to come to me when he returns," he told the man. Then he stalked out of the room.

"This is beastly," Wynyard said. "It's my fault. I'm sorry."

I said, "He'll find it out, you know. You can't keep Helena out of it."

"Who'll tell him?" said Wynyard.

I said, "My dear man, it's easy enough. He'll guess it."

And of course he did; but it took time. He wrote to Helena and had a telegram in

reply. Upon that he went to town, and saw her and Ethel Cook. I had left Inveroran, and had the facts from Hector, who came down with his father, but did not return with him. He dined with me soon after the things which he reported had happened, but not before I had myself had a visit from the chief himself, who wrote for an appointment.

Directly we were face to face he came to me with his hand out. "I ask your pardon, my dear friend, for my vehemence I was unjust and you bore with me." That was handsome in the old boy.

He went on, in a hurry: "You were awkwardly placed. You did what you had to do—and no more. Yes, I was unjust You could not have taken on yourself to tell me what you had heard by chance. No, no. But let me tell you that in what you did do—when you sent that weeping, deluded, ignorant, wronged girl to her mistress's heart, to her mistress's arms, you did a charitable, a fine act, sir. It has touched me—it has drawn me here."

He was greatly moved. His words choked him. He blew his nose vigorously with a red silk handkerchief I said, "Chief, I did what you would have done at the moment"—

which was pretty of me, but disingenuous, because I don't think—and didn't then think—that he would have done anything of the kind.

But he took it. "Yes, indeed—I hope so God help us all! I have seen Helena. She has told me—I am humbled by the sense of her generosity. And I have seen the poor girl, and think that we understand each other. Well, I won't keep you. You are good to bear with the self-reproaches of an old man. These are evil days for my house. I don't know where I stand at the moment. My lovers and friends stand afar off! But I have broad shoulders, and good friends yet. I doubt not I shall weather it." And then he marched out, with the air of the pipes (I am sure) ringing in his ears.

I must summarize events of which I have no personal knowledge. Hector kept me informed. Pierpoint was got into the Turkish army by interest, and went off without seeing his father or any of his brothers except Hector. Hector insisted on an interview and saw him off. I think he felt it his duty. He was very strict about that. His Ethel didn't go with him, and wouldn't see him; but



she admitted, under pressure, that she might change her mind by and by. She refused also to be set up by the family, preferring to be with Helena. Whether that was Helena's doing I don't know, but suspect that it was. She had very coaxing ways, and may have wanted a confidant. And there's another thing. Helena was exceedingly sensitive to opinion, and one of the cleverest women I ever knew at hitting off the right line. She may well have known how much comfort her friends at Inveroran would derive from her keeping Ethel by her. That they were comforted is beyond question. Hector said so. He said that the chief couldn't say kind enough things about Ethel. He was greatly touched—he hinted at generousities on a large scale in his will. That proves how clever Helena was—one mass of tentacles. As for my poor tentacular friend himself, consumed as he was by cares for what might or might not be Helena's fate, resumed by the claws of her husband, whom his dark imagination pictured as a horrible cross between Pan, Priapus, and Mephistopheles, his whole trust was in the gravity and deep bosom of his handsome sister-in-law. He made a kind of Demeter of that fine girl, and pictured her

keeping watch and ward while his pale Persephone shivered in the house of Hades.

The von Broderodes went back to Vienna. Hector wrote to her once a week, and heard from her, perhaps, once a month. He showed me some of her letters, or read me parts of them. She didn't complain, never mentioned the Baron (an old trick of hers), said that she had Hermione at home and seemed happy in feeling that she was bringing her up properly. Hermione was getting on for thirteen, a tall child. She had sent her photograph to Sir Roderick, and, as I gathered, a good deal more besides. "I told your father," or "the chief will know by this time"—constant phrases in her letters—pointed to a pretty regular correspondence with the head of the clan Malleson. But Hector, "the dangerous man," was not at all dangerous now. He loved her in his melancholy way. But there was to be no fruit. It had miffed-off, as the gardeners say. It was his career, in matters of the heart, to love romantically, and be esteemed in return. Like the Austrian army, he had a "tradition of defeat." Poor, excellent, chaste Hector.

## XXIII THE END OF IT ALL

WYNYARD went abroad, bought land in Florida, and prospered. He was out there when the news came that the Baron was dead. That was two years, rather more, after he carried home his Helena with such triumph as pertained. Hector dined with me when he had the news, and told me all about it. He said that he had wired to his father, not because it was necessary, for almost certainly Helena had told him, but for an odd reason. "My father likes little attentions, and doesn't like it to be known that he does. So I showed him one on my own account, and led him to infer that I knew nothing of Helena's. Do you see?" He thought that rather neat.

He talked a good deal about her, wondering how she was left off, what she would do with the Galicia estate, with Hermione—and with Ethel. That young woman had not yet claimed conjugal relationship with Pierpoint. Malleson Bey he was now. He had done very well with a Macedonian rising; was thought to

be a coming man "If I go out to Vienna," he said musingly, "I shall try to arrange something. It's pretty bad to have a pretty sister-in-law whom you can't treat as such."

"But you can treat her as such perfectly well," I told him "Do you suppose Helena has left her where she picked her up? Not a bit of it I bet you something handsome that Mrs. Ethel is a somebody in Vienna."

"She'd be a nobody at Inveroran," he said, "to the end of the chapter Why, old Sandars knew her as a between-maid."

"Oh, you can't have her there, of course." That I admitted. "But you can set her up with a household."

"I'll see about it," he said, and grew gloomy. I knew he was thinking of his chances with Helena, trying to get himself to admit that they were nothing at all

But he didn't go out for a long time He had heard the news in the summer. In August he went home and saw his father. No doubt that they talked about it. I know that he went with the intention of telling him what he hoped for. He stayed up there for his usual time, came back to London in October, and then told me that he was going to ask Helena to marry him. He was very depressed about it.

"I've loved her for nearly four years," he said. "I feel very nervous. She means so much to me by this time that I hardly dare consider her in such a relationship. Don't you understand that a man may magnify and enhance a woman so much by constantly brooding upon her with adoration that the other feelings are atrophied, as it were?"

I said that I did understand it, but added that I understood also that atrophy of the other feelings did not make marriage a hopeful adventure.

He knew that He began, "You think that a platonic union—" and I must needs laugh.

"Helena is no platonist," I said. "But, after all, I don't suppose that you are, either. Nor have you any business to be. The Inveroran nurseries must be filled. You have an inheritance to hand on."

"Nigel has half a dozen children," he said.

"They won't console your wife, my poor Hector," I told him.

He said, It was very difficult. I replied that I understood it was not. But he frowned me down.

The Baron, by his will, had left Rosemount to—Sir Roderick! Posthumous magnanimity,

which impressed Hector very much. I hadn't understood before that it had been his own property, but it seems that he bought it outright of Peter Grant: and now, with a cynical twist quite in keeping with his character, had dished that enemy of the Clan Malleeson. I could imagine him chuckling as he flapped his spectral wings over the family vault. Hector said that his father would accept the disposition, and was very glad of it, indeed, though he would not allow any merit to the disposer. There had been some question, he told me, whether or not the chief should go out to Vienna, but he had decided that Hector should take his place. Ample provision was to be made for Mrs Pierpoint, Pierpoint himself was to be urged to proper behaviour. As for Helena, the chief had written to her, no doubt, but Hector had no direct message to her from the head of his house. The chief had said to him, "She knows that her home is here. She'll find the fire on the hearth whenever she comes, whether it's mine or yours." That was all he had said, but he knew that the proud old chap was hungry for her. "He seems to be waiting. He's always looking South-east," he said. "And certainly the place is horribly empty without her."

"Well, my dear man," I said, "it's up to you. She'll come if you ask her."

He was still very depressed. "One can't marry to please one's father, you know."

"One doesn't," I said. Then I added, "Look here, Hector. I won't stand in your way. I never have yet. But if *you* don't ask her, I shall"

He was greatly surprised. "You! You love her?"

I said, "Not in your way. But I like to be comfortable as much as anybody, and she'd make any man comfortable."

"Your view is hateful to me," he said—and he looked it.

I said, "If the thought of her arms don't inspire you with feelings of comfort, you had better leave her alone. What! Are you a man, or an idea? She at least is woman," I said. "I promise you that." On that he left me.

We parted good friends; for I saw him off to the East and wished him well. I knew quite well what was going to happen to him, and I think he did too.

It was very like Hector to change his plans half-way towards the fulfilment of them. He was ostensibly going to Constantinople. He went, in fact, directly to Vienna, and I heard

from him there : a short and terse communication which, I have no doubt, he thought a business letter.

“ Helena is well,” he wrote. “ A beautiful serenity upon her, like a silver light on the sea. Hermione is exactly like her, but colder. Not so affectionate. Mother and daughter seem like sisters. I hardly knew Ethel again. She is a very distinguished person. Willing to see P, from whom she has had two or three letters. My father has written to her with his proposal for her establishment. She is indifferent to money but, I think, wants a child. I hasten to say that this is pure inference on my part. She looks older than Helena, to whom she is devoted. She has not been converted. Helena talks much of Scotland. I am hopeful of bringing her over in the spring. The Galician estates are to be sold. They are Hermione’s. Helena has very little. I am going to Constantinople next week. Helena does not wish P. to come here—but there is no likelihood of it. I hear that they think much of him at Constantinople.”

Then he sent me a line from Constantinople.

“ P. lives in great style here. He has a kind of kiosque—rather like a good sort of Florentine villa stuck out in a Venetian lagoon.



Cypresses all about it, a flaky wall with battlements, and weedy steps down into the water. He wasn't cordial, but heard what I had to say. My impression was that he would be glad to have Ethel if he were sure that she wanted to come. I told him that she was admired. He said that she always had been, but that she had been faithful to him in one class, and no doubt would continue so in another. I said plainly that he at least had given her no reason to be so. He answered, No, but she had had the reason in herself. That was rather sublime. At the end he said that he didn't care to have her here as his official wife, and I then discovered that he proposed to begin from the beginning. He was for a wooing. It was left like this, that she should settle herself in Vienna, and receive him when he presented himself. He would not, he said, be able to leave his duty for a month or two. If Helena has not gone by that time I shall have to ask her to receive him. I don't think she will desert Ethel until something is fixed. She is very faithful."

He was right. Helena said that the wooing must be done in her house, and that she would receive Pierpoint if he came out to Vienna.

She sent Hector home with a message for his father that she charged herself with the duty and would see it through. So far as I could make out, no tender proposals had been made her by my transcendental friend.

There the affair, so far as I was concerned, rested until the summer, when Helena was expected in London, *en route* for Inveroran. Meantime, however, Wynyard had come back to England. He arrived in May.

He looked abundantly healthy, but was grimmer than ever. Things had prospered with him. He grew oranges, and sold them. Had a large property and was adding to it. But he hadn't come over to deal in oranges. He told me in so many words that if he could get Helena he intended to do it. He squared his jaw, showed angry lights in his blue eyes, and looked formidable—but yet I doubted. He might frighten her into it, but the chances were that he would overdo it. He would not go North to see his father at present. He said that he had heard that Helena was coming to England, and should wait for her. He hoped to catch her in Paris and make his cast there. According as he sped, Inveroran should be his next move—or the White Star home.

He went off accordingly to Paris, and I didn't

hear from him again I gather that he made her a definite offer of his heart, hand and oranges, which she neither accepted nor rejected, but left in suspense. I gather as much because he didn't come back with her, nor cross the Atlantic, but went off walking by himself in the Pyrenees. He was expected at Inveroran in the autumn—to learn his fate—no doubt.

In London she was met by Hector, shining bolt in hand. He had screwed himself up; but when or where he sped it I don't know. Kew Gardens, I believe. The result, in his case also, was neither hit nor miss. He told me that she had been very kind to him—and you know what that means. There had been tears in her beautiful eyes; but she could give him no other answer but the assurance of her gratitude—at present. Hermione and she were staying with Mrs. Jack Chevenix. I was asked to meet them, but couldn't go. Pierpoint, I heard, had been in Vienna, and had laid siege to the heart of his wife, who had made him the happiest of men. So *that* was all right, or we were agreed to suppose it so. Then Helena and Hermione went up to Inveroran, and Hector was their escort. Then a bomb burst.

Wynyard came to my rooms one night while I was at dinner. It was late in July; London tired, dry and hot. I heard the door open and a bag flung down in the passage. I heard Wynyard say, "I shan't keep him a minute." And then he walked in. The light seemed to dazzle him. His eyes looked pale, his mouth was open; he kept opening and shutting his hands. I pictured him as having been stuck in a railway carriage all the way from Pampluna, with his mouth open, and his hands opening and shutting.

I got up, but he motioned me down.

"Go on," he said. "I'm not going to stay. I'm heading for Liverpool. I'm off."

"She won't have you?" I said.

He jerked his head. "She can't. She's going to be my stepmother. God of life and death!"

I wasn't at all surprised, but I had to pretend to be.

"Droit de Seigneur," I said. "After all, a chieftain's a chieftain."

Wynyard poured himself out a glass of sherry."

"I've been a d——d fool. I never thought of it. My idea was that Hector would ask her."

.

"Hector!" I cried. "Not a chance of Hector." Then I said, "If you really want my opinion, I think the best man has won. Your father has no peers. He will give you half a dozen young brothers and sisters, and spoil Helena over her pretty head and ears."

Wynyard squared his jaw. "I shouldn't have spoiled her," he said, "nor she me. We should have done very well."

He would have dragooned her, she would have been his slave. But I daresay she would have taken him if he had insisted on it, in time. I have always said of her from the beginning that she would have married any one of them and made him perfectly happy. The best man got her.

Old Laura Bacchus, who was there at the time and saw it all, gave me a detailed account of it. "I always expected it," she said, "at the back of my head. It lay there, put by like a Paisley shawl. I used to look at it now and then and say, You wait. I shall find a use for you one of these days. Directly she came up I saw how it was to be. Not from *him*, mind you. You don't catch a Scotchman letting you know his mind. He! He took it as

quietly as you please. Didn't go to the station even. Met her on the *perron* and gave her a kiss as if she was his daughter-in-law, and a kiss for young Miss too, who was shy. No, it was from her I saw what was going to happen. Why, my dear man, she settled down into his arms with a sigh you could hear across the room, fluffing out her breast-feathers like a nesting dove. And croon! My wig, I should think she *did* croon. Just one or two."

"Miss Bacchus, Miss Bacchus," I said, "no poetry here, I beg. Tell me the facts, and I'll ask the poetry in afterwards."

"She came," said Miss Bacchus, "with bright fever in her eyes; but that all went after the first day. And she took up her house-keeping where she left it off. The old chief had to blow his nose, the morning he came down and found his rose on his plate . . . You'll see. She'll get plump. She takes it all as a cat laps cream. You can see her lick her whiskers. She sits sleeking herself."

"My friend, my friend!"

"Oh, well," said Miss Bacchus, "I don't see why she should get off. You've always got to pay for your fun. She owes me a lot . . . Well, it didn't take 'em long. She came to,

me one afternoon with a soft light in her eyes. Came gliding in. They had a black-velvety look, as if they were all pupil. She stood and looked at me, her head on one side, like a thrush considering how or where to dig at his worm. Then she kissed me, and told me all about it. 'I think I'm the happiest woman in Europe,' she said. 'He's asked me to marry him.' 'And what did you say?' I asked her. She looked at me, her eyes laughing. 'I didn't say anything,' she said. 'There wasn't time.' I say, he's an old corker, isn't he though?"

I admitted that Sir Roderick might well be a corker.

"Well, she simply drank in happiness by the bosomful. She didn't understand that it could be so awfully nice and not be bad for you. 'Why don't I get drunk?' she said. And then she said, 'Oh, I *will* be good to him!' and then again, in a way that touched me, 'I've never had the chance of being good before.' It was rot, you know; but I'm sure that she felt like that."

I was not so sure that it was rot. I guessed that the Baron had been thwarting to virtue.

Miss Bacchus allowed for the Baron. His

life had hardened him. He had no use for good women and couldn't understand them. His palate had been ruined. "All cayenne pepper, you know," she said.

I ended up with a "Poor old Hector!" But she said, "Pooh! She'll be awfully kind to Hector. He don't want to marry anybody. He only wants a woman to say his prayers to. Will you take my three to one that he's his father's best man?"

I said that I would not. And it was lucky for me that I didn't. Because he was.

That's all over long ago. There's been a child since, and they do say—— But the child in being is a daughter, and called, with great gallantry, Euphemia. So Sir Roderick has tackled the Malleson curse, and looks like winning.

But I remember that Pat—at the wedding—had a jibe about Hector being like a mute at his own funeral; and that afterwards, when we had seen the happy pair off, and were lighting up, he had taken my arm, with the pretty wheedling way he had, and said, "Don't you love a chap who's an ass *pour le bon motif*?" I admit that I do. I'm awfully fond of Hector; and he'll make an excellent



stepson. Not that he will be asked to play Hippolytus. Helena is madly in love with her old Theseus. You never saw a fonder couple. Inseparable !

PRINTED AT  
THE BALLANTYNE PRESS  
LONDON & EDINBURGH







# Heinemann's Colonial Library

*Published for Sale in the British Colonies and India only.*

**Price 3s. 6d. Cloth, Post free 4/-, each Volume.**

- |                          |     |     |   |
|--------------------------|-----|-----|---|
| AINSLIE, NOEL            | ... | ... | An Erring Pilgrimage, 84                |
| ANON.                    | ... | ... | He Who Passed, to M.L.G., 431           |
| ANON.                    | ... | ... | Confessions of an Ambitious Mother, 311 |
| ATHERTON, GERTRUDE       | ... | ... | Los Cerritos, 61                        |
| BADEN-POWELL, Major-Gen. | ... | ... | Sport in War, 202                       |
| BALESTIER, WOLCOTT       | ... | ... | Benefits Forgot, 39                     |
| BARNETT, EDITH           | ... | ... | The Fetish of the Family, 270           |
| BARRETT, FRANK           | ... | ... | Kitty's Father, 9                       |
|                          | ... | ... | The Justification of Andrew Lebrun, 28  |
| BASHFORD, H. H.          | ... | ... | The Trail Together, 350                 |
| BATEMAN, MAY             | ... | ... | The Glowworm, 233                       |
| BATTERSHALL, FLETCHER    | ... | ... | A Daughter of this World, 31            |
| BEDFORD, RANDOLPH        | ... | ... | The Snare of Strength, 309              |
| BENHAM, CHARLES          | ... | ... | The Fourth Napoleon, 111                |
| BENSON, E. F.            | ... | ... | Juggernaut, 421                         |
|                          | ... | ... | A Reaping, 385                          |
|                          | ... | ... | The Climber, 373                        |
|                          | ... | ... | The House of Defence, 353               |
|                          | ... | ... | The Relentless City, 292                |
|                          | ... | ... | Mammon & Co., 169                       |
|                          | ... | ... | The Luck of the Vails, 231              |
|                          | ... | ... | The Challoners, 304                     |
|                          | ... | ... | An Act in a Backwater, 314              |
| BERESFORD, J. D.         | ... | ... | Goslings, 405                           |
|                          | ... | ... | The House in Demetrius Road, 483        |
| BEYERLEIN, F. A.         | ... | ... | Jena or Sedan, 301                      |
| BLAKE, BASS              | ... | ... | The Money God, 293                      |
| BODKIN, M. McDONNELL     | ... | ... | Paul Beck, 126                          |
| BOWLES, M.               | ... | ... | The Amazing Lady, 167                   |
| BRAILS福德, H. N.          | ... | ... | Gillette's Marriage, 229                |
| BRYANT, MARGUERITE       | ... | ... | The Broom of the War-God, 116           |
| BROOKE, EMMA             | ... | ... | The Adjustment, 430                     |
|                          | ... | ... | Sir Elyot of the Woods, 354             |
|                          | ... | ... | Life the Accuser, 68                    |
| BURGIN, G. B.            | ... | ... | Fortune's Footballs, 95                 |
| BURNETT, FRANCES HODGSON | ... | ... | The Shuttle, 362                        |
| CAINE, HALL              | ... | ... | The Scapegoat, 29                       |
|                          | ... | ... | The Eternal City, 223                   |
|                          | ... | ... | The Christian, 134                      |
|                          | ... | ... | The Manxman, 26                         |
|                          | ... | ... | The White Prophet, 391                  |
|                          | ... | ... | My Story, 374                           |
|                          | ... | ... | The Prodigal Son, 300                   |
|                          | ... | ... | The Bondman, 30                         |
|                          | ... | ... | The Woman Thou Gavest Me, 457           |
| CANNAN, GILBERT          | ... | ... | Devious Ways, 490                       |
|                          | ... | ... | Peter Homunculus, 390                   |
| CAPIES, BERNARD          | ... | ... | Little Brother, 433                     |
| CARR, MRS. COMYNS        | ... | ... | The Lake of Wine, 132                   |
| CASEY, SADIE             | ... | ... | Cottage Folk, 214                       |
| CHARTRES, A. VIVANT      | ... | ... | Libby Ann, 467                          |
| CHETWODE, R. D.          | ... | ... | The Devourers, 407                      |
|                          | ... | ... | John of Strathbourne, 108               |

Heinemann's Colonial Library *Continued.*

- CLARKE, A. W. . . . . Jasper Tristram, 225  
 COBBAN MACCLAREN, J. . . . . Pursued by the Law, 157  
 COLMORE, G. A Conspiracy of Silence, 60 A Daughter of Music, 5  
 COMPTON, C. G. . . . . The House of Bondage, 41b  
 CONRAD JOSEPH I. Iyphoon, 267 The Nigger of the "Narcissus", 118  
 CONSTABLE, F. C. . . . . Aunt Judith's Island, 139  
 CORNFORD, L. COPE . . . . . The Last Buccaneer, 253  
 CRACKANTHORPE, H. . . . . Sentimental Studies, 271  
 CRANE, SILPHEN . . . . . Bowery Tales, 220  
 . . . . . The Third Violet, 88  
 DANBY, FRANK . . . . . An Incomplete Bostonian, 383  
 . . . . . Pigs in Clover, 265  
 D'ANNUNZIO, GABRIELE . . . . . Baccarat, 402  
 . . . . . The Victim, 159  
 . . . . . The Virgins of the Rocks, 175  
 DAVIS, R. H. . . . . Ransom's Polly, 259  
 . . . . . The Lion and the Unicorn, 1, 6  
 . . . . . In the Log, 252  
 DAWF, CARLTON . . . . . Captain Castle, 82  
 DAWSON, A. J. . . . . Hidden Manna, 256  
 . . . . . In the Light of Benin, 205  
 . . . . . African Nights, Entertainment, 185  
 . . . . . The Story of Ronald Kestrel, 224  
 . . . . . God's Foundling, 112  
 . . . . . Joseph Khass in Half-Caste, 232  
 DAWSON SCOTT, C. A. . . . . The Burden, 384  
 . . . . . Treasure Trove, 489  
 DE MORGAN, WILLIAM . . . . . It Never Can Happen Again (2 vols.), 305  
 . . . . . A Likely Story, 422  
 . . . . . Somehow Good, 366  
 . . . . . Joseph Vance, 356  
 . . . . . Alice for Short, 359  
 . . . . . An Affair of Dishonour, 405  
 . . . . . When Ghost Meet Ghost, 466  
 DE PRAIZ, CLAIRI . . . . . Live Norrie, 369  
 DEHAN, RICHARD . . . . . The Dop Doctor, 402  
 . . . . . Between Two Thieves, 439  
 . . . . . The Headquarters Reunion, 464  
 . . . . . The Cost of Wines, 482  
 DESART, THE EARL OF . . . . . The Rind of the "Detramental", 103  
 DICKINSON EVELYN . . . . . Hearts Impertunite, 182  
 DICKINSON H. N. . . . . Kaddy, 351  
 . . . . . The Business of a Gentleman, 481  
 DIX, GERTRUDE . . . . . The Image Breakers, 222  
 DIXON, F. I. A. HEPWORTH . . . . . The Story of a Modern Woman, 27  
 DIXON, JUNE, F. . . . . The Clansman, 316  
 DOWIE, MINIE M. . . . . Love and his Mask, 238  
 DOWSON F. & MOORE, A. . . . . A Comedy of Masks, 22  
 DUDENEY, MRS. HENRY . . . . . A Sense of Scarlet, 394  
 . . . . . A Large Room, 410  
 . . . . . Rachel Lorian, 378  
 . . . . . The Orchard Thief, 360  
 . . . . . Spindle and Plough, 278  
 . . . . . The Story of Susan, 285  
 . . . . . The Maternity of Harriott Waken, 162  
 . . . . . Maid's Money, 428  
 . . . . . Wise Woods, 321  
 . . . . . A Runaway Ring, 443  
 . . . . . Set to Partners, 470  
 . . . . . What a Woman Wants, 493  
 DUNNE, E. P. . . . . Mr. Dooley Says, 411  
 EGERTON, GEORGE . . . . . Symphonies, 115  
 ELSON, ROBERT . . . . . The Magnate, 375  
 FERNALD, CHESTER BAILEY . . . . . Chinatown Stories, 179  
 FITZPATRICK, J. P. . . . . The Outspan, 194  
 FLEMING, MRS. J. M. . . . . A Pinchbeck Goddess, 79  
 FLOWERDEW, H. . . . . A Celibate's Wife, 154  
 . . . . . The Realist, 172  
 FOTHERGILL, JESSIE . . . . . Oriole's Daughter, 10  
 FRAZER, W. A. . . . . Thoroughbreds, 277  
 FREDERIC, HAROLD . . . . . Gloria Mundi, 148  
 . . . . . March Hares, 92

FRIEDMAN, I. K.  
FRYERS, AUSTIN ...  
GALSWORTHY, JOHN  
    The Patrician, 413     Fraternity, 379  
    The Man of Property, 357  
GARLAND, HAMLIN ...  
AUNT, MARY & ESSEX, J. R.  
GERARD, DOROTHEA ...  
GHOSH, SARAH KUMAR ..  
GILCHRIST, R. MURRAY  
    The Courtesy Dame, 100

GISSING, GEORGE ..  
GJELLERUP, KARL .. Minna, 447  
GLASGOW, ELLEN .. The Voice of the People, 208  
    Phases of an Inferior Planet, 140

GOAD, HAROLD ELSDALE  
GOLDIE, MRS.  
GOLDIE, V.     The Declaration of Henry D'Almeida, 456

GORDON, SAMUEL ..  
GORKE, MAXIM ..  
GOSSE, EDMUND ..  
GRAND, SARAH ..  
    Ideals, II  
    Heavenly Twins (2 Vol.) 12-13  
GRAYS, FELIX     The White Terror, 230  
GRAY, MAXWELL L.  
    Four Leaved Clover, 258  
    The Last Sentence, 15

GRIFFIE, FRANCIS ..  
GROSVENOR, HON. C.     The Hands of Orion, 340  
HALL, GERTRUDE ..  
HAMILTON, COSMO ..  
HAMILTON, MARY AGNES  
HAMILTON, M.     Less Than the Dust, 445     Yes, 491  
    The Freedom of Henry Meredyth, 100  
    A Self Denying Ordinance, 44  
HARROD, FRANCES ..  
HART, MABEL ..  
HARTLEY, M. ..  
HARRY, MIRIAM ..  
HAYWARD, RACHEL ..  
HERBERTSON, JESSIE LECKIE  
    Borrowers of Fortune, 437

HEWLETT, MAURICE ..  
HICHENS, ROBERT  
    Bella Donna, 303  
    The Londoners, 122  
    An Imaginative Man, 40

HILLIERS, ASHTON  
HOLDSWORTH, ANNIE E. ...  
    The Valley of the Great Shadow, 191

HUNGERFORD, MRS. ..  
HUNT, VIOLET ..  
    Tales of the Uneasy, 419

HUTCHINSON, J. R.  
    Pirate Gold, 144

By Bread Alone, 262  
A Pauper Millionaire, 161  
The Country House, 346  
The Island Pharisees, 368  
The Dark Flower, 472  
The Eagle's Heart, 221  
Fools Rush In, 342  
Sawdust, 234  
1001 Indian Nights, 299  
Beggar's Manor, 287  
The Oath Women, 6  
The Pilgrim Kaminita, 423  
The King dom, 463  
The Veiled Fate, 490  
Marjory Stevens, 430  
Unto Each Man His Own, 295  
The Orloff Couple, 237  
The Secret of Narcissus, 200  
The Beth Book, 127  
Our Manifold Nature, 21  
Adam's Orchard, 440  
Richard Rosny, 264  
The House of Hidden Treasure, 131  
Sweethearts and Friends, 210  
The Things that Matter, 45  
Laura, 426  
The Truth about Camilla, 468  
Duke's Son, 315  
Mother Earth, 268  
Sacilege Farm, 257  
Beyond Man's Strength, 397  
The Conquest of Jerusalem, 336  
The Hippodrome, 452  
Young Life, 417  
The Fool Errant, 313  
The Slave, 177  
Flames, 24  
The Folly of Eustace, 78  
Memoirs of a Person of Quality, 348  
The Gods Arrive, 106  
The Wife of Altamont, 403



# MR. WILLIAM HEINEMANN'S LIST

## Heinemann's Colonial Library—Continued.

JACOB, VIOLET	...	The History of Aythan Waring, 365
The Interloper, 280	...	The Sheepstealers, 245
JACOBS, W. W.	...	The Skipper's Wooing, 96
JACOMB, AGNES E.	...	Esther, 429
JAMES, HENRY	The Two Magics, 149	The Awkward Age, 165
What Maisie Knew, 120	Terminations, 41	Embarrassments, 74
The Other House, 85	...	The Spoils of Poynton, 90
JEPSON, EDGAR	...	On the Edge of the Empire, 164
JESSE, TENNYSON	...	The Milky Way, 473
KEARY, C. F.	...	Herbert Vanlennert, 47
KEATING, JOSEPH	...	The Perfect Wife, 471
KEELIN G. ELSA D'ESTERRE	...	Appassionata, 56
LANDER, HARRY	...	Lucky Bargee, 123
LANGTON, L.	...	Fall of Lord Padlockslea, 286
LAWRENCE, D. H.	...	The White Peacock, 420
LEE, VERNON	...	Vanitas, 183
LEGGE, A. E. J.	...	Both Great and Small, 173
LINTON, MRS. LYNN	...	In Haste and at Leisure, 33
LITTLE, MRS. ARCHIBALD	...	A Marriage in China, 152
LONDON, JACK	Martin Eden, 406.	Burning Daylight, 415
LORIMER, NORMA	...	Catherine Stirling, 260. On Etna, 307
LOW, IVY	...	Growing Pains, 458
LOWNDES, MRS. BELLOC	...	Jane Oglander, 414
When No Man Pursueth, 399	...	The Pulse of Life, 367
Barbara Rebell, 322	...	The Heart of Penelope, 310
MAARTENS, MAARTEN	...	Some Women I have known, 240
MACFALL, HALDANE	...	Rouge, 327
MALLING, MATHILDA	...	A Romance of the First Consul, 146
MALOT, HECTOR	...	Her own Folk, 73
MARGUERITTE, VICTOR	...	Frontiers of the Heart, 453
MARNAN, BASIL	...	A Daughter of the Veldt, 216
MAUD, CONSTANCE	...	Felicity in France, 345
MAUGHAM, W. S.	The Magician, 377	The Explorer, 363
The Merry-go-Round, 308	...	Mrs. Craddock, 255
MEAKIN, NEVIL M.	...	The Assassins, 246
METOUR, EUGENE PAUL	In the Wake of the Green Banner, 401	...
MILLER, ESTHER	...	Rosabel, 289
A Prophet of the Real, 230	...	A Vendetta in Vanity Fair, 330
MITFORD, BERTRAM	...	Tween Snow and Fire, 125
...	...	A Romance of the Cape Frontier, 91.
MOORE, GEORGE	...	The Lake, 317
Hail and Farewell! Ave, 432.	...	Hail and Farewell! Salve, 442
Hail and Farewell! Vale, 459	...	The Untilled Field, 492
MORDAUNT, ELEANOR	The Cost of It, 446	Lu of the Ranges, 474
...	The Island, 486	...
MORRIS, WILLIAM	...	The Wood Beyond the World, 36
MORSE, C. R.	...	Life at Twenty, 196
MOTT, LAWRENCE	...	The White Darkness, 361
...	...	Jules of the Great Heart, 318
NEVILL, LORD WILLIAM	...	Penal Servitude, 248
NEBBIT, HUME	...	Land of Hibiscus Blossom, 170
NIVEDITA, SISTER	...	The Web of Indian Life, 331
NORDAU, MAX	The Drones Must Die, 158	Comedy of Sentiment, 42
NORRIS, F.	...	Vandover and the Brute, 485
NORRIS, W. E.	...	Marietta's Marriage, 104
A Victim of Good Luck, 25	...	The Countess Radna, 14
The Dancer in Yellow, 70	...	The Widower, 145

## Heinemann's Colonial Library—Continued.

- NORTH, LAURENCE ... .. Syriax, 388  
 O. A. De ... .. Indiscretions of Dr. Carstairs, 476  
 OSBOURNE, LLOYD ... .. The Adventurer, 376  
     Wild Justice, 335 ... .. The Queen versus Billy, 215  
 OUIDA ... .. The Tower of Taddeo, 5  
 PAGE, THOMAS NELSON ... .. Red Rock, 150. Gordon Keith, 283  
 PARKER, SIR GILBERT ... .. The Lane that had no Turning, 203  
     The Weavers, 358. The Right of Way, 228. Donovan Pasha, 241  
 PATERSON, ARTHUR ... .. The King's Agent, 274  
 PATTERSON, J. E. ... .. Tillers of the Soil, 416  
     The Story of Stephen Compton, 455  
 PEARCE, J. H. ... .. Eli's Daughter, 198. Ezekiel's Sin, 206  
 PEMBERTON, MAX ... .. The Queen of the Jesters, 97  
 PENDERED, MARY L. ... .. A Pastoral Played Out, 32  
 PHELPS, E. S. ... .. The Master of the Magicians, 63  
 POCCOCK, ROGER ... .. Curly, 298  
 POPHAM, FLORENCE ... .. The Housewives of Edenrise, 254  
 PRAED, MRS. CAMPBELL ... .. The Scourge Stick, 129  
 PRICE, F. C. ... .. Lord Kentwell's Love Affair, 396  
 PRICHARD, K. & H. HESKETH ... .. The Cahusac Mystery, 449  
 PRIOR, JAMES ... .. Hyssop, 294  
 PROSPER, JAMES ... .. The Mountain Apart, 477  
 PROWSE, R. O. ... .. Voysey, 213. James Hurd, 459  
 PUGH, EDWIN ... .. The Stumbling Block, 275  
     Tony Drum, 212 ... .. The Man of Straw, 99  
 REES, ARTHUR J. ... .. The Merry Marauders, 478  
 REEVES, AMBER ... .. The Reward of Virtue, 425  
     A Lady and Her Husband, 480  
 RICHARDSON, H. H. ... .. The Getting of Wisdom, 40. Maurice Guest, 381  
 RIDDELL, MRS. ... .. The Head of the Firm, 3  
 RIVES, AMELIE ... .. According to St. John, 57  
 ROBERTS, MORLEY ... .. The Colossus, 171  
 ROBINS, ELIZABETH ... .. Come and Find Me, 370  
     The Magnetic North, 288 ... .. Below the Salt, 193  
     The Open Question, 151 ... .. Where Are You Going To.?, 444  
 ROLLAND, ROMAN ... .. John Christopher, in 4 vols.  
     I. Dawn and Morning, 451 ... .. III. John Christopher in Paris, 461  
     II. Storm and Stress, 460 ... .. IV. The Journey's End, 462  
 ROUGEMONT, LOUIS DE ... .. The Adventures of Illus., 168  
 RUSSEL, BARON ... .. The Mandate, 174  
 RYCE, MARK ... .. Mrs. Drummond's Vocation, 427  
 SANDEMAN, G. ... .. Uncle Gregory, 387  
 SAVILE, FRANK & WATSON, A. ... .. E. T. Fate's Intruder, 329  
 SEDGWICK, ANNE DOUGLAS ... .. The Confounding of Camelia, 166  
     The Dull Miss Archinard, 141  
 SERAO, MATILDE ... .. The Land of Cockayne, 269  
     The Conquest of Rome, 284  
 SERGEANT, ADELINE ... .. The Failure of Sibyl Fletcher, 81  
 SHERINGHAM, H. T. & MEAKIN, N. ... .. The Court of Sacharissa, 296  
 SINCLAIR, UPTON ... .. Journal of Arthur Stirling, 355  
     The Jungle, 332 ... .. King Midas, 341. Prince Hagen, 347  
 SIRRAH ... .. The Lion of Gersau, 291  
 SLADE, DOROTHEA ... .. Gutter-Babies, 450  
 SPOTTISWOODE, SYBIL ... .. Her Husband's Country, 435  
     Hedwig in England, 392 ... .. Marcia in Germany, 380  
 STACPOOLE, H. DE VERE ... .. Toto (The Rapin), 186

## Heinemann's Colonial Library---Continued.

- STEEL, FLORA ANNIE** The Sovereign Remedy 334  
 A Prince of Dreamers, 372 The Hosts of the Lord, 211  
 In the Guardianship of God, 261 Miss Stuart's Legacy, 188  
 Voices in the Night, 201 Red Rowans, 187  
 The Flower of Forgiveness, 189 In the Permanent Way, 102  
 In the Tideway, 190 From the Five Rivers, 18  
 The Potter's Thumb, 23 King-Errant, 441  
 On the Face of the Waters, 72 The Mercy of the Lord, 484
- STEVENSON, ROBERT LOUIS** The Ebb Tide, 24 St. Ives, 98  
**STOKER, BRAM** ... The Lady of the Shroud, 386  
 Lady Athlyne, 371 The Jewel of Seven Stars, 270  
 The Mystery of the Sea, 243 The Man, 319
- STRAUS, RALPH** ... The Scandalous Mr. Waldo, 398  
**STREET, G. S.** ... The Wise and the Wayward, 93  
**SUTCLIFFE, HALLIWELL** ... The Eleventh Commandment, 49  
**SUTHERLAND, DUCHESS OF** ... The Winds of the World, 244  
**SWANN, DUNCAN** ... The Magic of the Hill, 424  
 A Country House Comedy, 489
- SWIFT, BENJAMIN** ... Nude Souls, 207  
**SYKES, LADY** ... Algernon Casterton, 272
- TARELLAQUIN** ... A Desert Rose, 487 Kerns: A Stone, 488  
**TARKINGTON, BOOTH** ... The Guest of Queensay, 382  
**TASMA** ... A Knight of the White Feather, 1  
**THOMSON, BASIL** ... A Court Intrigue, 184  
**THORNHILL, GERALD H.** ... The Golden Sceptre, 150  
**TIREBUCK, W. E.** ... Twixt God and Mammon, 264  
 Miss Grace of All Souls, 46  
 Diana and Two Symphonies, 469
- TOYE, FRANCIS** ... Godfrey Martin, Schoolboy, 250  
**TURLEY, CHARLES** ... A Band of Brothers, 475
- UNDERHILL, EVELYN** The Grey World, 337 The Lost World, 343  
**VIVIAN, CHARLES E.** ... Passion Fruit, 434  
**VAN VORST, MARIE** ... Miss Desmond, 338  
 The Sin of George Warrener, 333  
 Thews of England, 251  
 Under the Yoke, 454
- VAUX, PATRICK** ... Via Lucis, 137 [114  
**VAZOFF, IVAN** ... Jack Raymond, 219 The Gadfly,  
**VIVARIA, KASSANDRA** ... The Rebel, 181  
**VOYNICH, E. L.** Olive Latham, 290 The War of the Worlds, 113  
**WATSON, H. B. MARRIOTT** ... The Island of Dr. Moreau, 52  
**WELLS, H. G.** ... The Journal of a Jealous Woman, 204  
 Certain Personal Matters, 109 Mr. Bailey-Martin, 50 Corruption, 43
- WHITE, PERCY** Andrea, 75 Jane Field, 19  
 A Millionaire's Daughter, 155 Spensthiift Summer, 282  
**WILKINS, MARY E.** ... Fortune's Sport, 142  
**WILLIAMS, MARGERY** ... Sons of the Sword, 235 The Invader, 352  
**WILLIAMSON, MRS. C. N.** ... The Southerner, 404  
**WOODS, MARGARET L.** ... Yonder, 438  
**WORTH, NICHOLAS** ... Ghetto Comedies, 349  
**YOUNG, E. H.** ... The Mantle of Elijah, 209  
**ZANGWILL, ISRAEL** ... Dreamers of the Ghetto, 119  
 The Grey Wig, 249 Children of the Ghetto, 7  
 \* They that Walk in Darkness, 180 The Celibates' Club, 135  
 The Master, 37 Without Prejudice, 192  
 The King of Schnorrers, 80 A Drama in Dutch, 34  
 The Premier and the Painter, 16  
 The World and a Man, 67
- ZOLA, EMILE** ... Stories for Ninon, 65  
**ZUGGOLI** ... Light Fingered Gentry, 409

# A SELECTION OF BOOKS FROM MR. WILLIAM HEINEMANN'S CATALOGUE

## ART AND GIFT BOOKS.

- ALDIN, CECIL** A Gay Dog, The Story of a Foolish Year. 4to Col. Illus. Boards. 3s.
- ALDIN, CECIL** A Dog Day, or the Angel in the House. Pictured in col. New and Cheap Ed. 10mo 1s 6d
- ANDERSEN, HANS CHRISTIAN.** Fairy Tales. Trans. fr. Danish by H. J. BRABNSTAD. Introd. by EDMUND GOSSE. Queens Ed. Illus. 6s. n.
- ARMSTRONG, SIR WALTER.** Gainsborough and His Place in English Art. 4s. Plates. Pop. Ed. Roy. 8vo. 16s. n.
- ARMSTRONG, SIR WALTER.** Sir Joshua Reynolds. Pop. Ed. Roy. 8vo. Illus. 15s. n.
- BARNHORN, MAX.** Fifty Caricatures. Sm. Cr. 4to. 6s. n.
- BLUMFELT, MRS. HODGSON.** The Secret Garden. Illus. in Col. by CHARLES ROBINSON. Large Cr. 8vo. 6s.
- CASPER, AGNES & MURTON.** Our Sentimental Garden. Illus. in Col. and Black and White by CHARLES ROBINSON. Cr. 4to. 6s. n.
- CATHEDRAL CITIES**  
COLLINS, W. W. Cathedral Cities of Italy. 56 Col. Plates. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
COLLINS, W. W. Cathedral Cities of Spain. 61 Col. Plates. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
GILBERT, GEORGE. Cathedral Cities of England. 60 Col. Plates by W. W. COLLINS. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.
- MARSHALL, HERBERT AND HENRY.** Cathedral Cities of France. 60 Col. Plates by HERBERT MARSHALL. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.
- CHAMBERLAIN, ALICE.** On the Art of the Theatre. Illus. Large Cr. 8vo. Boards. 6s. n.
- DOUGLAS, AUSTIN.** William Hogarth. 76 Illus. Demy 8vo. 6s. n.
- EMERSON, FRANKLIN.** Epochs of Chinese and Japanese Art. An Outline History of East Asiatic Design. 2 vols. Fully Illus. Cr. 4to. 85s. n.
- EMERSON, MARY.** Blossoms from a Japanese Garden. With 21 Illus. in Col. by Japanese Artists. Sq. Cr. 8vo. 7s. n.
- FRY, WALTER.** ADOLF. Masterpieces of Greek Sculpture. Last by EMMETT HELLER. 16 full page Plates and 90 text Illus. Imp. 8vo. £2.5s. n.
- GALSWORTHY, JOHN.** Memories. With Plates in Col. and Black and White Illustrations by MARY FRY. Cr. 4to. 4s. n.
- "HAYDARI, DR."** The Four Gardens. Illus. in Col. by C. ROBINSON. Large Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.
- HOPKINS, LAURENCE.** The Garden of Kama. Illus. in Col. and Decorated by ELEANOR. Roy. 4to. 15s. n.
- LEWIS, DR. G. MURRAY R.N.** Antarctic Penguins. Beautifully Illus. from Photographs. 6s. n.
- MILNE, EMILE.** Rembrandt Harmensz Van Ryn. 30 Plates. 4to. 80s. n.
- MORREY, VALENTINE, CHARLES.** The Technique of Painting. Illus. in Colour and Black and White. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. n.
- MUNIZ, BENIGNO.** Leonardo Da Vinci. 3 vols. 48 Plates, and 259 Text Illus. Imp. 8vo. £2.5s. n.
- PENNELL, E. R. and J.** The Life of James McNeill Whistler. New and Revised Ed. 12 vol. Illus. Port. 4to. 1.5s. 6d. n.
- PEREIRA, JOSEPH.** Pictures of the Panama Canal. Together with Impressions and Notes by the Artist. Cr. 4to. 5s. n.
- RACKHAM, ARTHUR.** Works Illustrated in Colour by Arthur Rackham's Book of Pictures. 44 Plates in Col. with Intro. by SIR A. P. QUILLER-COUCH. Cr. 4to. 15s. n.
- SCOP.** Aesop's Fables. A New Translation by V. S. VERNON JONES. With an Introduction by G. K. CHESTERTON. Large Cr. 8vo. 8s. n.
- SARHAM, R. H.** The Ingelby Legends, or, Mirth and Marvels. By THOMAS INGOLDSBY, Esq. Cr. 4to. 12s. n.
- FOUR, DELA MOTTE.** Undine. Adapted by W. L. COURTNEY. Cr. 4to. 7s. 6d. n.
- MOTHER GOOSE.** The Old Nursery Rhymes. Illus. in Col. and Black and White. Sq. Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.
- SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM.** A Midsummer-Night's Dream. Cr. 4to. 12s. n.
- WAGNER, RICHARD.** The Ring of the Nibelung. Vol. I. Rheingold and Siegfried. Vol. II. Siegfried and the Twilight of the Gods. Cr. 4to. Each Vol. 15s. n.
- BRINACH-SALOMON.** Apollo. Fr. the French by FLORENCE SIMMONDS. 4th Illus. Cr. 8vo. 6s. n. Leather. 8s. 6d. n.
- RONLAND, EDMUND.** The Story of Chanticleer. Illus. in Col. and Black and White by J. A. STREPHARD. Sq. Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.
- RUCCI, ELISA.** Old Italian Lace. Plates in Col. and Photograv. and numerous text Illus. 2 Vols. Cr. 8mo. £2 6s. n.

## MR. WILLIAM HEINEMANN'S LIST

### Art and Gift Books—Continued.

- RICCI, S. de.** *Louis XVI. Furniture in France.* 500 plates. Demy 4to. 25s. n.  
**SALAMAN, MALCOLM C.** *French Colour-Prints of the XVIII. Century.* With 50 Plates in Col. Demy 4to. £2 2s. n.  
**SEIDLITZ, W. von.** *A History of Japanese Colour Prints.* Col. illus. and Black and White. Cr. 4to. 25s. n.  
**SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM.** *All the Tales from Shakespeare.* With Plates in Colour from the Paintings of Great Masters. 2 vols. Large Medium 8vo. 21s. n.  
**SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM.** *The Merry Wives of Windsor.* Illus. by HUGH THOMSON. Cr. 4to. 10s. n. Edit. de luxe. Cr. 4to. £2 2s. n.  
**STEELEY, PERCY BYSSHE.** *The Sensitive Plant.* Illus. and Decorated by CHARLES ROBINSON. Parchment, Gilt. Cr. 4to. 15s. n.  
**SHORT, ERNEST H.** *A History of Sculpture.* Cr. 8vo. Illus. 6s. n.  
**STEBL, FLORA ANNIE.** *The Adventures of Akbar.* A Book for Children. Illus. in Col. By BYAM SHAW. Sq. Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.  
**TYNDALE, WALTER.** *Below the Cataracts.* 10 Col. Plates. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
**WHISTLER, J. MCNEILL.** *The Gentle Art of Making Enemies.* Port. 4to. 10s. 6d. n.

### BIOGRAPHY AND HISTORY.

- ANTIN, MARY.** *The Promised Land.* The Autobiography of a Russian Immigrant. Cr. 8vo. Illus. 7s. 6d. n.  
**BARTELOU, M. LOUIS.** *Mirabeau.* Illus. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
**BATIFFOL, M. LOUIS.** *The Duchesse de Chevreuse.* Illus. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
**BERNHARDT, SARAH.** *My Double Life.* Demy 8vo. Illus. 10s. n.  
**BLAND, J. O. P.** *Recent Events and Present Policies in China.* Illus. Roy. 8vo. 16s. n.  
**BLAND, J. O. P., and BACKHOUSE, E.** *China under the Dowager Empress.* New and Cheaper Edit. Illus. Roy. 8vo. 6s. n.  
**BLAND, J. O. P. and BACKHOUSE, E.** *Annals and Memoirs of the Court of Peking.* Royal 8vo. 16s. n.  
**BOIGNE, COMTESSE DE.** *Memoirs of the Comtesse de Boigne.* Edit. fr. the Orig. MS. by M. CHARLES NICOLLAUD. Vol. I. (1781-1814). Vol. II. (1815-1819). Vol. III. (1820-1830). Demy 8vo. Portraits. 10s. n. each vol.  
**BOIGNE COMTESSE DE.** *Recollections of a Great Lady.* Being more Memoirs of the Comtesse de Boigne (1831-1860). Portrait. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
**BRANDES, GEORGE.** *Friedrich Nietzsche.* Demy 8vo. 6s. n.  
**DAUDET, ERNEST.** *Madame Royale.* Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
**DAWSON, SARAH MORGAN.** *A Confederate Girl's Diary.* Demy 8vo. 6s. n.  
**DINO, DUCHESSE DE.** *Memoirs of the Duchesse de Dino (afterwards Duchesse de Talcy and et de Sagam).* Edit. with Notes and Biographical Index, by the PRINCESSE RADZIWILL (née CASTELLANE). Vol. I (1821-1835). Vol. II (1836-1840). Vol. III (1841-1849). Frontispieces. Demy 8vo. 10s. n. each vol.  
**FERRERO, GUGLIELMO.** *The Greatness and Decline of Rome.* 5 Vols. Demy 8vo. 6s. net each Vol. I. *The Empire Builders.* II. *Julius Caesar.* III. *The Fall of an Aristocracy.* IV. *Rome and Egypt.* V. *The Republic of Augustus.*  
**FILON, AUGUSTIN.** *The Prince Imperial.* Roy. 8vo. Illus. 15s. n.  
**FRANKE, LOVAT.** *India Under Curzors and After.* Photogr. and Map. Royal 8vo. 16s. n.  
**FRENIILY, FRANCOIS AUGUSTE, BARON DE.** *Recollections of Baron de Frenilly (1766-1828).* Edit. by ARTHUR CHUQUET. Demy 8vo. Portraits. 10s. n.  
**GALLATIN, JAMES.** *A Great Peacemaker: The Diary of James Gallatin Secretary to Albert Gallatin, 1813-1827.* Illus. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
**GOBINEAU, ARTHUR, COUNT.** *The Renaissance.* English Edition. Edited by DR. OSCAR LEVY. Illus. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.  
**GOSSE, EDMUND.** *Father and Son.* Fcap. 8vo. 2s. n. Limp. Leather. 3s. n. *Booklovers' Edition.* With 2 photograv. plates. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.  
**GRAHAM, R. B. CUNNINGHAME.** *A Vanished Arcadia: being some Account of the Jesuits in Paraguay, 1607 to 1767.* Demy 8vo. Map. 9s.  
**GRAHAM, R. B. CUNNINGHAME.** *Hernando de Soto.* Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.  
**HEINE, HEINRICH.** *Meinrich Heine's Memoirs.* From his Works, Letters, and Conversations. Edit. by G. KARPELES. 2 Vols. Demy 8vo. 12s. n.

## Biography and History—Continued.

- HERBIOT, HENRI.** Madame Recamier. 2 Vols. Demy 8vo. Portraits. 30s. n.
- HOLIDAY, HENRY.** Reminiscences of My Life. Illus. in Col. and Black and White. Royal 8vo. 16s. n.
- HOVEY, CARL.** The Life Story of J. Pierpont Morgan. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- LENOTRE, G.** The Flight of Marie Antoinette. Demy 8vo. Illus. 10s. n.
- LENOTRE, G.** A Gascon Royalist in Revolutionary Paris. The Baron de Batz. 1792-1795. Fr. the French. Illus. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.
- LENOTRE, G.** The Last Days of Marie Antoinette. Demy 8vo. Illus. 10s. n.
- LENOTRE, G.** The Tribunal of the Terror. Demy 8vo. Illus. 10s. n.
- MASSON, FREDERIC.** Napoleon and the Fair Sex. Demy 8vo. 6s.
- MATTHEWS, T.** The Biography of John Gibson, R.A.. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. n.
- MAUGRAS, GASTON and COUNT P. DE GROZE LEMBERTER.** Memoirs of Delphine De Sabran, Marquise de Custine. Portrait. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.
- MELVILLE, L.** The Life and Letters of William Beckford. Illus. Roy. 8vo. 15s. n.
- MOORE, GEORGE.** Memoirs of My Dead Life. Cr. 8vo. 7s.
- MURRAY, T. DOUGLAS, Ed.** Jeanne D'Arc. Demy 8vo. Illus. 8s. n.
- NIETZSCHE, FRAC FORSTER.** The Young Nietzsche. Demy 8vo. Illus. 15s. n.
- NIETZSCHE, FRAC FORSTER.** The Lonely Nietzsche. Demy 8vo. Illus. 15s. n.
- PATTERSON, J. E.** My Vagabondage. Demy 8vo. 8s. 6d. n.
- ROLLAND, ROMAIN.** The Life of Michael Angelo. Illus. 1ge. Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.
- SAROLEA, DR. C.** How Belgium Saved Europe. Cr. 8vo. Cloth. 7s. 6d. n. Paper Boards, 2s. n.
- SEIGNOBOS, C.** A Political History of Contemporary Europe. New and Cheaper Edit. Demy 8vo. 6s. n.
- SHARP, ELIZABETH A.** William Sharp. (Flora Macleod). A Memoir compiled by his Wife. 2 Vols. Cr. 8vo. 10s. n.
- STEAD, RUTHVEN W.** My Father: Personal and Spiritual Reminiscences. Illus. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.
- STENGEL, GILBERT.** The Return of Louis XVIII. Demy 8vo. Illus. 10s. n.
- STOKER, BRAM.** Personal Reminiscences of Henry Irving. Demy 8vo. Illus. 6s. n.
- TABBELL, IDA.** The History of the Standard Oil Company. 2 Vols. Demy 8vo. 24s. n.
- VEBERTCHAGIN, VASSILI.** "1812." Napoleon I. in Russia. Cr. 8vo. Illus. 6s.
- WALISZEWSKI, K.** Ivan the Terrible. Transl. by LADY MARY LOYD. Demy 8vo. 14s. n.
- WALISZEWSKI, K.** Marysienka. Queen of Poland. Demy 8vo. 6s.
- WALISZEWSKI, K.** Paul I. of Russia. Roy. 8vo. 15s. n.
- WHITMAN, SIDNEY.** German Memories. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- WHITMAN, SIDNEY.** Turkish Memories. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- WILES, F. T.** Men Around the Kaiser. Cr. 8vo. New and Cheaper Edit. in Paper Boards. Illus. 2s. n.
- WILLSON, BECKLES.** The Life and Letters of James Wolfe. Demy 8vo. Illus. 15s. n.

## DOMESTIC ECONOMY.

- A Guide to Modern Cookery.** By A. ESCOFFIER. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. n.
- The Complete Indian Housekeeper and Cook.** Giving the duties of Mistress and Servant, the General Management of the House and Practical Recipes for Cooking in all its branches. By FLORA ANNIE STEEL and GRACE GARDINER. Revised to date. Crown 8vo. 6s.
- The Pleasures of the Table.** A Complete History of Gastronomy, with a Bibliography. By GEORGE MARLWANGER. 8vo. Illustrated. 12s. n.

## DRAMATIC WORKS

Each Vol 10mo. Cloth 2s 6d Paper, 1s 6d.

- ANSLEY T. The Brass Bottle.  
 BEVERLEY FRANK ADAM Lights Out.  
 CHAMBERS (HADDON) The Awakening The Tyranny of Tears.  
 DANNINGTON GARRICK Gloconda  
 DAVIES HUGHES HEVRA Cousin Kate Mrs Gorrings & Necklace.  
 A Single Man The Mollusc Lady Epping & Lawsuit.  
 HAINES BEN OTO MICHEL Love & Carnival  
 HAUPMANN GERRHARD Hannele Weavers Lonely Lives Sunkn Ball.  
 HELLMANN HOFFMAN I The Ghetto  
 HENLEY W R and EVINSON R I Admiral Guines. Beau Austin  
 Deacon Bradie Micaire  
 HEWINGS MARCEL Pan and the Young Shepherd  
 MARSHALL R His Excellency the Governor  
 MAUGHAM W S The Explorer Jack Straw Lady Frederick A Man of  
 Honour Mrs Dot Penelope Smith The Tenth Man Landed  
 Gentry  
 MONTELL GILBERT Andromache Carlyon Sahib  
 PINERO SIR ARTHUR W The Amazons The Weaker Sex  
 The Cabinet Minister Iris The Profligate  
 Dandy Dick Lady Bountiful The School-Mistress.  
 The Gay Lord Quex Letty Sweet Lavender  
 His House in Order The Magistrate The Thunderbolt  
 The Hobby Horse Mid-Channel The Times  
 The Bonnet of the Doubt The Second Mrs Inqueray  
 The Notorious Mrs Pbbmith Isidawn of the 'Wells  
 Preserving Mr Unamure A Wife without a Smile  
 The Princess and the Butterfli The Wind the Paint Girl  
 ROSTAND EDMOND Cyrano de Bergerac The Fantasticks

- BUCHANAN ROBERT The Piper of Hamelin I must Overtake Act 3  
 illus. by HUGH THOMSON 1s 6d  
 COUDENHOFF W I Undine 1s 6d  
 DANNINGTON GARRICK Francesca Di Rimini Transl. by ARTHUR WYMONS  
 2s 6d Poems 1s 1d  
 GOSWOLD RICHARD Hypolympia Or the Gods in the Island 10p 2s 6d  
 King Ark A Tragedy 1s 6d  
 HENLEY W R and SIMMONSON, H. L. Plays Deacon Bradie Admiral  
 Guines Beau Austin Richard Mervise 1s 6d Buckton 6d  
 LEBRON HENRIK Collected Works. Copyright Edition Entirely Revised  
 and Edited by WILLIAM ARTHUR 2s 6d each  
 I Lady Inger of Ostrat The Feast at Solhong Love & Comedy.  
 II The Vikings at Helgoland. The Pretenders III Brand  
 IV. Peer Gynt V Emperor and Galilee  
 VI. The League of Youth Pillars of Society  
 VII A Doll's House Ghosts  
 VIII. An Enemy of the People The Wild Duck.  
 IX. Rosmersholm. The Lady from the Sea.  
 X. Hedda Gabler. The Master Builder.  
 XI. Little Eyolf John Gabriel Borkman. When we Dead Awaken  
 XII From Ibsen's Workshop Note Scenarios and Drafts of the Plays.  
 MOORE, GEORGE Esther Waters. Demy 2s 6d  
 ROBERTSON, W GRAHAM Pinkie and the Fairies. A Lady Plays 3 Acts.  
 illus. by the AUTHOR. 10mo 2s. Paper, 1s  
 STARRS, MARIE Plays of Old Japan. The 'No.' 2s. 2.  
 SANDWILL, FRANK The War God. The Next Religion. The Meeting  
 Pot. Greater Saints. 2s. 6d. each.

## LITERATURE.

- BREERHOHM, MAX. A Christmas Garland. Cr. 8vo. 6s.
- BRANDEN, GEORGE. Main Currents in Nineteenth Century Literature. 6 vols. Demy 8vo. 5s. n. each vol.
- Vol. I. The Emigrant Literature.
- Vol. II. The Romantic School in Germany.
- Vol. III. The Reaction in France.
- Vol. IV. Naturalism in England.
- Vol. V. The Romantic School in France.
- Vol. VI. Young Germany.
- BRANDEN, GEORGE. William Shakespeare. A critical study. Dy. 8vo. 17s. n.
- CARTON, HUGH. The Grand Assize. By a Humble Clerk. Cr. 8vo. 3s. 6d. n.
- GALESWORTHY, JOHN. A Motley. Cr. 8vo. 6s.
- GALESWORTHY, JOHN. The Inn of Tranquillity. Studies and Essays. Cr. 8vo. 6s.
- GARNETT, RICHARD. Essays of an Ex-Librarian. Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d.
- GARNETT, RICHARD, and GOSSE, EDMUND. English Literature. An illustrated record. 4 vols. Imp. 8vo. Cloth 25s. Half leather 24 4s. n.
- I. From the Beginnings to the Age of Henry VIII.
- II. From the Age of Henry VIII to the Age of Milton.
- III. From Milton to Johnson.
- IV. From the Age of Johnson to the Age of Tennyson.
- GOSSE, EDMUND. The Collected Essays of. 5 vols. Cr. 8vo. 6s. net each.
- I. XVII Century Studies.
- II. Critical Kit-Kats.
- III. Gossip in a Library.
- IV. French Profiles.
- V. Portraits and Sketches.
- GOSSE, EDMUND. A Short History of Modern English Literature. New and Revised Edition. 7 Plates. Large Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d.
- GRIMMELSHAUSEN, HANS JACOB CHRISTOPH VON. The Adventurous Simplicissimus. Special Edn. Large Cr. 8vo. Half leather. 7s. 6d. n.
- MACFOD, WIONA (WILLIAM SHARP). The Collected Works. In 7 vols. Photograv. Frontispieces by D. Y. CAMERON, A.R.S.A. Cr. 8vo. Each vol. 6s. n.
- Vol. I. Phalaris: The Mountain Lovers.
- Vol. II. The Sin Eater. The Washer of the Lord, and other Legendary Moralities.
- Vol. III. The Dominion of Dreams: Under the Dark Star.
- Vol. IV. The Divine Adventure: Iona: Studies in Spiritual History.
- Vol. V. The Winged Destiny: Studies in the Spiritual History of the Gael.
- Vol. VI. The Silence of Amor: Where the Forest Murmurs.
- Vol. VII. Poems and Dramas.
- SHARP, WILLIAM. The Selected Writings of. Edit. by MRS. WILLIAM SHARP. In 3 vols. Cr. 8vo. Each vol. 5s. n.
- I. Poems.
- II. Studies and Appreciations.
- III. Papers Critical and Reminiscent.
- IV. Literary Geography and Travel Sketches.
- V. Vistas. The Gipsy Christ and Other Prose Imaginings.
- WATSON, KATHLEEN. Litanies of Life. Cr. 8vo. 2s. 6d. n.
- Later Litanies. Cr. 8vo. 2s. 6d. n.
- WAUGH, ARTHUR. Alfred, Lord Tennyson. Cr. 8vo. Illus. 2s. 6d.

## PHILOSOPHY.

- HIESCH, DR WILLIAM. Genius and Degeneration. Demy 8vo. 17s. n.
- MERCIER, CHARLES, M.D., F.R.C.P., F.R.C.S. A New Logic. Demy 8vo. 10s. n.
- MITCHNIKOFF, ELIE. The Nature of Man. Studies in Optimistic Philosophy. English Transl. Edit. by CHARLES MITCHELL, Hon. LL.D. Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.
- NORDAU, MAX. Degeneration. Demy 8vo. New Edn. 2s. 6d. n.
- NORDAU, MAX. Paradoxes. Demy 8vo. 6s.
- NORDAU, MAX. Conventional Lies of our Civilization. Demy 8vo. 6s.
- WERNER, G. T. The Grammar of Life. Cr. 8vo. 6s. n.



## POETICAL WORKS.

- ANDERSON, W. MONRO. Rhymes of a Rouseabout. Cr. Svo. 3s. 6d. n.
- BINYON, LAURENCE. Auguries. Cr. Svo. 3s. 6d. n.
- CAINE, R. HALL, ed. Love Songs of English Poets, 1500-1800. Fcap. Svo. 3s. 6d.
- CRANE, STEPHEN. The Black Riders and other Lines. 18mo. Leather, 3s. 6d.
- EVANS, C. S. (Ed.) Our Glorious Heritage; An Anthology of Patriotic Verse for Boys and Girls. Cr. svo. 1s. n. Also School Edit. 1s.
- FENOLLOSA, MARY. Blossoms from a Japanese Garden. With 20 illus. Col. by Japanese Artist. Sq. Cr. Svo. 3s. n.
- GALSWORTHY, JOHN. Moods, Songs and Doggerels. Cr. Svo. 3s. n.
- GOSSE, EDMUND. The Autumn Garden. Demy Svo. 5s. n. Firdausi in Exile and other Poems. Fcap. svo. 3s. 6d. n. On Viol and Flute. Fcap. Svo. 3s. 6d. n. Collected Poems. Fcap. Svo. 5s. n.
- HEINE, HEINRICH. The Works of Heinrich Heine. 12 vols. Cr. Svo. Each vol. 3s. n.
- I. Florentine Nights. The Memoirs of Herr Von Schnabelewopski. The Rabbi of Bacharach; and Shakespeare's Maidens and Women.
  - II. Pictures of Travel. (1823-1826.) III. Pictures of Travel. (1826.)
  - IV. The Salon: or, Letters on Art, Music, Popular Life, and Politics.
  - V. Germany. Vol. I. VI. Germany. Vol. II.
  - VII. French Affairs. Letters from Paris. Vol. I.
  - VIII. French Affairs. Letters from Paris. Vol. II. Lutezia.
  - IX. The Book of Songs. X. New Poems.
  - XI. Germany. Romancero, Bks. I. & II. XII. Romancero, Bk. III. Last Poems.
- HILSTON, JOHN. Aphrodite and other Poems. Demy Svo. 3s. n.
- HOPE, LAURENCE. Each Demy Svo. 5s. n. The Garden of Kama. Indian Love Stars of the Desert.
- LEE-HAMILTON, EUGENE. Mimma Bella. Demy Svo. 3s. n.
- MACLEOD, FIONA. From the Hills of Dream: Threnodies, Songs and Later Poems. Cr. Svo. 5s. n.
- MACLEOD, FIONA (WILLIAM SHARP). Poems and Dramas. Cr. Svo. 5s. n.
- MASEFIELD, JOHN. Dauber. 3s. 6d. n. The Daffodil Fields. Cr. Svo. 3s. 6d. n. Philip the King. 3s. 6d. n.
- NAIDU, SARAJINI. The Bird of Time. Introd. by EDMUND GOSSE. 5s. n.
- NAIDU, SARAJINI. The Golden Threshold. Introd. by A. SYMONS. 2s. 6d.
- PATTERSON, J. E. The Lure of the Sea. Demy Svo. 5s. n. The Sea's Anthology. Cr. Svo. (Cloth, 2s. 6d. n. Leather, 3s. n.)
- SCHILLER, FRIEDRICH VON. The Poems of Schiller. Transl. into English by E. P. ARNOLD-FORSTER. Cr. Svo. 6s.
- SHARP, WILLIAM (FIONA MACLEOD). The Selected Writings of. Edited by MRS. WILLIAM SHARP. Cr. Svo. 5s. n. Vol. I. Poems.
- SHELLEY, PERCY BYSSHE. The Sensitive Plant. Col. Plates by CHARLES ROBINSON. Crown 8vo. 15s. n.
- SYMONS, ARTHUR. The Poet of the World and other Poems. Cr. Svo. 15s. n. Images of Good and Evil. Cr. Svo. 6s. Poems. 2 vols. Svo. 10s. 6d. Knave of Hearts. Demy Svo. 5s. n.
- TENNYSON, A.B.S. A Legend of Old Persia. Demy Svo. Half-canvas. 5s. n.
- ZANGWILL, ISRAEL. Blind Children. Sq. Svo. 5s. n.

## SCIENCE AND EDUCATION.

- ADAMS, H. ISABEL. Wild Flowers of the British Isles. Revised by JAMES E. BAGNALL. (Vol. I.) Demy 4to. 75 Col. Plates. (Vol. II.) Demy 4to. 51 Col. Plates. Each Vol. 50s. n.
- ALFREDANDY, VICTOR H. Elementary Business Training. Cr. Svo. 1s. 6d.
- BURNET, DR. ETIENNE. Microbes and Toxins. Preface by Prof. E. METCHNIKOFF. Cr. Svo. 11s. n.
- CHAYTON, H. J. French Translation and Composition. Cr. Svo. 2s.
- FRIEDBERG, REV. S. JOSEPH. An Annotated Hebrew Text. Cr. Svo. 5s. n.

**Science and Education. *Continued.***

- GARDINER, F. A. *First Year Course in General Science.* 4 combined text-book and note book. 4to. 2s. 6d.
- HANSEL, CARL W. *Introductory Electricity and Magnetism.* 50 diagrams and illustrations. Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d.
- JONES, R. HENRY, M.D., *Experimental Domestic Science.* Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d.
- KROPOTKIN, PRINCE. *Mutual Aid. A Factor of Evolution.* Demy 8vo. 8s. 6d.  
Also Cheaper Edition in Paper Boards. 1s. 6d.
- NITZEL, P. CHALMERS. *The Childhood of Animals.* With Col. Plates by E. YERKOW JONES, and Drawings by H. B. BROOK GRIFFITHS. Roy. 8vo. 10s. 6d.
- MONTESSORI, MARIA DR. *The Montessori Method. Scientific Pedagogy as applied to Child Education in the Children's Home etc., with additions and revisions by the Author's Illustrations.* Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- Pedagogical Anthropology.* Demy 8vo. 14s. 6d. n.
- Dr. Montessori's Own Handbook.* Illus. 8vo. Cr. 8vo. 6d. n.
- REDKROY, H. STANLEY. *Experimental Mensuration.* Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d.
- REINACH, SALOMON. *Apollo.* 100 Illus. Cr. 8vo. 6s. 6d. n. Leather 8s. 6d. n.
- WEININGEL, OTTO. *Sex and Character.* Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. n.

**SOCIOLOGY.****(Health, Hygiene, and Medicine.)**

- BROWN, GOODWIN A. M. *Scientific Nutrition Simplified.* Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- CHILFENDIN, RUSSELL H. *The Nutrition of Man.* Demy 8vo. Illus. 14s. 6d. n.
- CHILFENDIN, RUSSELL H. *Physiological Economy in Nutrition.* Demy 8vo. 14s. 6d. n.
- CLIFF, ALBERT H. M.D. *The Efficient Life.* Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- HOLLOPETER, W. C. M.D. *Malaria and its Successful Treatment.* Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- MARSDEN, I. W. M.D. *Hints on the Management of the Commoner Infections.* Demy 8vo. 4s. 6d. n.
- MITCHELL, E. H. *The Prolongation of Life. Optimistic Studies.* Imp. 8vo. 10s. 6d. n.
- MITCHELL, JOHN K. M.D. *Self Help for Nervous Women.* Familiar talks on nervous and mental diseases. Cr. 8vo. 6d. n.
- SINCLAIR, UPON. *The Fasting Cure.* Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- SPRING, S. SQUIRE. *Medicine and the Public.* Cr. 8vo. 6s. 6d. n.
- WALTON, GEORGE LINCOLN, M.D. *Those Nerves.* Cr. 8vo. 7s. 6d. n.
- WALTON, GEORGE LINCOLN, M.D. *Why Worry?* Small Cr. 8vo. 6s. 6d. n.

**(Political Economy and Political Science.)**

- ANGELL, NORMAN. *The Great Illusion. A Study of the Relation of Military Power in Nations to their Economic and Social Advantages.* Cr. 8vo. 2s. 6d. n.
- The Foundations of International Policy.* Demy 8vo. 6s. 6d. n.
- Peace Theories and the Balkan War.* 8vo. 3s. 6d. n.
- Prussianism and its Destruction.* Cr. 8vo. Paper Boards 1s. 6d. n.
- ARNLEY, LAWRENCE, B.A. *The Loss of the S.S. "Titanic." Its Story and its Lessons.* Cr. 8vo. Illus. 3s. 6d. n.
- 'HOME COUNTIES. (J. W. ROBERTSON SCOTT.) *A Free Farmer in a Free State.* Illus. Demy 8vo. 6s. 6d. n.
- LAUNAY, L. DR. *The World's Gold. Tragedy.* by ORLANDO CYPRIAN WILLIAMS. Spec. Introd. by CHARLES A. CONANT. Cr. 8vo. 8s. 6d. n.
- NOVIKOW, J. *War and its Alleged Benefits.* With an Introd. by NORMAN ANGELL. Cr. 8vo. 2s. 6d. n.

## Sociology—Continued.

## (Woman.)

- BINNIE CLARK, GEORGINA. *Wheat and Woman*. Illus. Cr. 8vo. 1898.  
 LYTTON, LADY CONSTANCE, and "JANE WARREN." *Prisons and Penitentiaries*. Cr. 8vo. 3s. 6d. n.  
 MAYREDER, ROSA. *A Survey of Woman's Problem*. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 SALMREY, C. W. M. P. *Woman and Womanhood*. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 UZANNE, OCTAVE. *Fashion in Paris*. 50 Hand-colored Plates and 120 Text-Plates, by FRANÇOIS COCHONNET. 1898. 8vo. 15s.  
 UZANNE, OCTAVE. *The Modern Parisienne*. With an introduction by the MARQUIS DE VON HETTER. Demy 8vo. 6s. r.

## SPORT, TRAVEL, AND ADVENTURE.

- BARTLETT, E. ASHMEAD. *With the Turks in Thrace*. Illus. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 BELL, GERTHIE LOWTHIAN. *Amurath to Amurath*. Illus. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 CLOWES, E. M. *On the Wallaby Through Victoria*. Illus. 8vo. 1898.  
 DE GUKERLIK, A. B. *New Egypt*. Demy 8vo. Illus. 1898.  
 DUGMORE, A. RAICLIEFF, F. R. G. S. *Wild Life and the Camera*. With Photographs from life by the Author. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
*Camera Adventures in the African Wilds*. New Edn. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
*The Romance of the Newfoundland Caribou*. Illus. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
*The Romance of the Beaver*. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 ENCYCLOPEDIA OF SPORT AND GAMES. THE EDITOR, THE LARUE OF  
 SUPPLES AND REVISIONS. A New and Enlarged Edition. 1898. 4to. 10s.  
 Plates and 2,000 Illus. (Photographs and Drawings). 100s. 1898.  
 HARRIS, MAJOR GENERAL, J. P. *China Jim*. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
*China Jim: The Life of an Indian Soldier*. With Portraits of the Author. 1898.  
 HOLT, AUGUST EDUARD. *Morocco the Piquant*. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 JAMES, HENRY. *Italian Hours*. Illus. by JAMES HENRY. 1898. 8vo. 6s. n.  
 JAMES, HENRY. *A Little Tour in France*. 34 Plates by JAMES HENRY. 1898. 8vo. 6s.  
 LANDOR, A. HENRY SAVAGE. *In the Forbidden Land*. 1898. 8vo. 6s. n.  
 NANNEN, FRIDOLF. *In Northern Mists*. A New Expedition to the North Pole. Numerous Plates and Col. Frontispiece. 1898. 4to. 10s. n.  
*Through Siberia to the Land of the Future*. Cr. 8vo. 1898.  
 POWELL, F. A. *Fighting in Flanders*. Illus. 1898. 8vo. 6s. n.  
 PRICHARD, H. HENKELD. *1898. Hunting camps in Wood and Water*. Illus. by Lady Helen Graham, F. R. S. 1898. 8vo. 6s. n.  
 PRICHARD, H. HENKELD. *Through Frackless Land*. 1898. 8vo. 6s. n.  
 HELEN GRAHAM, and G. PHOTODU. 1898. 8vo. 6s. n.  
 BRACKLETON, SIR F. H. C. O. *The Heart of the Antarctic*. Being a Story of the British Antarctic Expedition 1898-1900. Edited by HUGH BRACKLETON. MILL, P. S. O. An Account of the first journey to the South Magnetic Pole. By PROFESSOR T. W. ADRIAN WORTH DAVIN, F. R. S. 1898. 8vo. 10s. n.  
 Illus. Maps, and Portraits. New and Revised Edn. With 100 Illus. and Black and White. Cr. 8vo. 1898. Popular Edn. 1s. 6d. n.  
 STEVENSON-HAMILTON, MAJOR J. W. R. S. *Animal Life in Africa*. With a Foreword by THEOPHILE LACOSTE. Illus. 1898. 8vo. 10s. n.  
 TALBOT, P. AMATEUR. *In the Shadow of the Bush*. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 TYNDAL, WALTER. *Below the Cataracts*. 10 Col. Plates. Demy 8vo. 1898.  
 VALE, P. A. *Modern Lawn Tennis*. Cr. 8vo. 1898. 6s. n.  
 WHITNEY, CASPAR. *The Mining Road*. Adventures on the Great Mining Road of North America. Illus. Demy 8vo. 1898. 10s. n.

## SERIES.

## ARS UNA SPECIES MILIT. GENERAL HISTORY OF ART.

Cr. 8vo. Each Vol. contains about 600 Illus. and Col. Plates. 1898.

- ARMSTRONG, SIR WALTER. *Art in Great Britain and Ireland*.  
 BRULAYOV, M. MARCEL. *Art in Spain and Portugal*.  
 FLOURET, LOUIS. *Art in France*. MANSERO, G. *Art in Egypt*.  
 RICCI, GIORGIO. *Art in Northern Italy*.  
 ROBERT, MAX. *Art in Flanders*.

## FRENCH ARTISTS OF OUR DAY.

Large Cr. 8vo. 18 Plates. Each Vol. 3s. 6d. n.

- Courbet. By L. REYBIDE. Manet. By L. MOUTRIQU.  
 P. De Chassagnas. By A. MICHEL.

GREAT EDUCATORS.

OF STUD. MATERIALS ON

- BOWEN, H. FORBES. *Frederick and Education by Self-Activity.*  
 COMPTON, C. Abillard and the Origin and Early History of Universities.  
 DAVIDSON, THOMAS. Aristotle and Ancient Educational Ideas.  
 DAVIDSON, THOMAS. Rousseau and Education according to Nature.  
 DE GARBE, CHARLES. Herbart and the Herbartians.  
 FITCH, SHERB. T. and M. Arnold and their Influence on English Education.  
 HINSDALE, P. A. Horace Mann and the Common School Education of A.  
 HUGHES, RY. T. Loyola and the Educational System of the Jesuits.  
 PINCHARD, A. Pestalozzi and the Foundation of the Modern School.  
 WEST, ANDREW FLEMING. Adams and the Rise of the English Schools.

GREAT NON-PAYERS.

- ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

LITERATURES OF THE WORLD.

- ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

LEAFLET BOOKS, ALLEN, G. B. FOR SALE.

- ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 ALLEN, G. B. *Principles of Education*. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

THE MODERN CRIMINAL SCIENCE SERIES.

- I. Modern Theories of Criminality. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 II. Criminal Psychology. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 III. Crime, its Causes and Remedies. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 IV. The Individualization of Punishment. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 V. Penal Philosophy. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.  
 VI. Criminology. By G. B. Allen. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

SCIENTIFIC MANUFACTURES.

1. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

2. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

3. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

4. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

5. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.

6. 1894. 12mo. 100 pp. \$1.00.







